This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

THE

LIFE

AND

REAL ADVENTURES

OF

Hamilton Murray.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

LONDON:
Printed for the AUTHOR;
And Sold by J. BURD, Printer, in New-Street, Shoe-Lane.
MDCCLIX.

249. n. 61.

THE

PREFACE.

THE ſubſequent ſheets contain a faithful narrative of the life and tranſactions of a young man, who, through the villany of his relations, has been frequently expoſed to the deceitful machinations of a ſet of men whoſe only god is gain, and the ſupreme pleaſure of their lives centered in that political ſtroke of fineſſe, which, by the knowing ones of the age, is vulgarly called, *taking-in.*

I need not expatiate upon the meaning of this phraſe, as it is already well known throughout this metropolis, and become as neceſſary in moſt branches of buſineſs to be thoroughly underſtood as the four

firſt rules in arithmetic; though at firſt it was probably only a cant phraſe among horſe-dealers, and horſe-jockeys, in the practical tranſactions of their calling: but, in proceſs of time, our young tradeſmen, began to look upon it as a neceſſary qualification; and as they had frequent opportunities to experience its true ſignification by their ill-placed bets at Newmarket and Epſom, it is not to be wondered if ſo valuable a ſcience, and which coſt them ſo dear in the learning, ſhould be fully diſplayed through their future tranſactions in their proper calling.

At a time when the paſſions are in their greateſt aſcendency, and require the moſt nice circumſpection to keep them within bounds, you will find me (from a *taking-in* principle of my guardian) ſent to ſea for a ſacrifice, where, not even the natural roughneſs of the element, could

could defend me from feeling the effects of ſo uſeful an art. So true it is, that we may change our climate, but cannot change ourſelves.

My commencing trader at the inſtigation of a certain ſtock-broker, and the ill ſucceſs that followed, may be a leſſon to young beginners, how they ſuffer themſelves to be deceived by the alluring profeſſions of a falſe friend. There are many ſuch harpies in this great city, whoſe only buſineſs is to ruin the innocent, and betray the unwary into their ſnares.

The article of purchaſing a place for life in a public office is now ſo much in uſe, that every young fellow, who can command a little money, thinks himſelf provided for to all intents and purpoſes; but let ſuch beware, it is not all gold that glitters; and there are many who will ſell them ſuch places, who were never in poſſeſſion of one themſelves. This may ſeem, at firſt, very

ſtrange, but after they have been once effectually bubbled, conviction will follow.

I need not ſay any thing as to the enormous villany practiſed at many of our intelligence and regiſter-offices, a late pamphlet having already diſplayed thoſe harpies in their proper colours, and done them no more than the ſtricteſt juſtice; only I cannot help obſerving, that many an innocent family owe their ruin to thoſe nurſeries of deceit and wickedneſs; and one example I have given in the following ſheets, will be ſufficient to prove, that people cannot be too much upon their guard againſt the deſigns of ſuch mercenary wretches.

As the electrifying ſtory is, in all its parts, a reality, I think it incumbent upon me to caution my female readers, thoſe I mean who are poſſeſſed of property, and are either actually, or very near bordering upon

upon the verge of old maids, not to put a blind confidence in the amorous profeſſions of young men; for let me tell them, that, though a torrent of flames, darts, racks and tortures, ſhould be made uſe of thro' the progreſs of the courtſhip, no ſooner ſhall the indiſſoluble knot be tied, and matrimony inveſt the lover with the authoritative power of a huſband, than the philtre will be removed from their eyes, and they will early be convinced to a demonſtration, that one of the greateſt antipathies of nature is frozen age, and buckſom, joyous youth.

As the principal intention of this preface is to apologize for the following work, ſo I hope its author will not be condemned, becauſe the incidents therein contained may be ſaid to border upon what is called *low*, and were not tranſacted at the court end of the town; ſince I the rather choſe to relate facts as they

really fell to my obſervation, than in ſuch manner I might wiſh them to have happened; and therefore, as truth has many advantages over mere fiction, I flatter myſelf that this narrative, *low* as it is, will not be unacceptable. Not but I am too well convinced that it has many faults which will call for the indulgence of the diſcerning reader; but as the curſe of ſcribbling never ſeized me before, and probably never will again, the candid and judicious will readily make allowances for the tranſgreſſions of a young ſinner, and, with the temper of a primitive critic, where they cannot approve, condemn with moderation.

HAMILTON MURRAY.

THE

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

State of nature at my production. — A word to the critics. — Some account of my birth and family. — Fall under the guardianſhip of an uncle. — Delineation of him and my aunt. — Am ſent to a country boarding-ſchool, and initated in the myſteries of flogging the firſt day. page 1

CHAP. II.

I make great progreſs in the claſſicks, and am conſtituted cenſor of the ſchool. — Carry my authority with a high hand, which brings on a conſpiracy againſt me. — They effect my diſgrace with the preceptor. — I am diſcarded my poſt with infamy. 13

CHAP.

vous diſorder, which produces ſtrange alterations.—She adopts a new ſyſtem of parſimony.—Expatiates on the wonderful virtues of vegetables, and reduces me, by her ſpecifics, to the verge of a conſumption. 57

CHAP. VII.

Am reinforced by a new acquaintance.—He takes notice of my pelican ſituation.—Harangues me on the villanous practices of guardians; and, after promiſing to regulate my conduct upon a new plan, introduces me to a ſhopkeeper, who ſupplies me with money on a remarkable footing. 67

CHAP. VIII.

Raily takes me to a bawdy-houſe.—Our reception by the miſtreſs of the manſion.—Are awaked in the night by a horrible noiſe.— ake a diverting diſcovery, and over-hear a ſingular piece of altercation between our hoſteſs and an officer of the guards.—Make

Make a ſally into the ſtreets.— Exerciſe our talents on an inſpired ſhoemaker, and are committed to the watch-houſe for a riot. 80

CHAP. IX.

I embrace my uncle's propoſal of going to ſea.— Am rigged out accordingly.— Set ſail for Holland.— We are overtaken by a terrible ſtorm, and obliged to put into Yarmouth.— Diverting cataſtrophe of two of the paſſengers. 97

CHAP. X.

We are viſited by a preſſing tender.— The lieutenant of the gang points me out for a king's man. — I endeavour to procure a repeal with money, but am fruſtrated in my purpoſe by bad policy in this particular.— He is prevailed upon to become my banker, and is characteriſed by a quarter gunner. — We arrive on board the Æ——a, and are entertained by a ſingular adventure. 106

CHAP.

The CONTENTS.

CHAP. XI.

I am accuſed of mutiny by the boatſwain. — Am chained down to the deck all night, and tried by a court of officers next morning. — Procure my releaſe at the inſtance of the chaplain, who is abuſed on my account. — Improve a hint that is given me, and effect my diſcharge by the mediation of the ſurgeon's mate. 123

CHAP. XII.

I land at Deal. — Put up at a public houſe. — Qualifications of my landlady. — Commence an intrigue with Miſs Betſy her daughter, which is carried on to the laſt criſis. 146

CHAP. XIII.

Am re-enforced by my ſhip-mate Baudrons. — Viſit the Royal Hoſpital. — Am diverted with the humour of an invalid. — My companion makes an excurſion in the dead of night, which involves

involves him in a very ridiculous adventure. 155

CHAP. XIV.

We reſolve to bilk our landlady.—Take the London road, and put up for the night at Sandwich. — Baudrons commits a ſecond blunder, which lays us under the ſuſpicion of highwaymen. —Great zeal of an Iriſh tinker, and a recruiting officer on the occaſion.— Are overtaken by Mrs. Coaxum, who arreſts us for damages; but relieved from durance, by the friendly aſſiſtance of ſome ſailors. 165

CHAP. XV.

We take places in the Graveſend waggon.— A moſt alarming diſcovery is made by one of the paſſengers, which involves poor Baudrons in a freſh torrent of diſmay. 175

CHAP.

The CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVI.

Wherein is related a very ſingular adventure that befel me at an inn upon the road. 182

CHAP. XVII.

Set out on the remainder of our journey.—Our fellow-paſſengers deſcribed.—Several curioſities in natural philoſophy are delineated by a quack-doctor, who enforces our credulity by diſplaying a remarkable branch of his profeſſion. 190

CHAP. XVIII.

Arrive at my inn.—Am picked up by an old ſon of Satan on the Royal Exchange, whom I wound deſperately.—Go to a pawnbroker's in Hounſditch, who ſtops my watch on ſuſpicion of its being ſtolen.—Procure its recovery by accidentally meeting with a friend.—He diſcovers the fraudulent practices of that tribe

tribe of men, harangues me on the danger of truſting to appearances, and buys my whole fortune by the lump, for ready money. 208

CHAP. XIX.

Commence a ſmart fellow.—Take chambers in the temple.—Buy a horſe of great parentage, for which I pay forty guineas.—Go to Epſom races, and win a round ſum of money.—Dance with a young lady at a ball.—Loſe my watch.—Am taken in by a ſharper, and fleeced of every penny.—My fine horſe turns out a moſt egregious bite.—I recover my watch by a ſtrange accident. 219

THE

To the Binder.

The cancelled leaf in this volume, ſignature K 4, page 199, is ſupplied by the laſt leaf of ſheet L in ditto.

THE

LIFE and ADVENTURES

OF

HAMILTON MURRAY.

CHAP. I.

State of nature at my production.—A word to the critics.—Some account of my birth and family.—Fall under the guardianſhip of an uncle.—Delineation of him and my aunt.—Am ſent to a country boarding-ſchool, and initiated in the myſteries of flogging the firſt day.

NOTWITHSTANDING my public appearance in this manner on the theatre of the world, I do aſſure my kind readers, that upon the moſt exact ſcrutiny, I cannot

find any of thoſe extraordinary occurrences attending my birth, as are frequently adopted by moſt adventurers who intend to make a figure in print. The moon exhibited the ſelf-ſame gracious benignity in her countenance as now, when ſhe appears to our organs of perception and viſion about three quarters old, in a clear ſky and ſtar-light: the tides, as tides commonly are when the moon is of the before-mentioned age; neither, by any accounts, do I hear, that the ſea overtopped its bounds, or old church-ſteeples ſaluted the ground, at the unmannerly inſtigation of a ſoutherly or a north-weſt wind. On the contrary, all was calm, ſerene, and mild; and nature in the ſame tranquility, as if no ſuch perſon had been introducing on the carpet: ſo that I made my entry into this vale of tribulation with as little eclat, as any the moſt ſimple clown. But, that I may not entirely deviate from ſo long eſtabliſhed a cuſtom, and thereby draw down on my offending head

head the awful reſentment of ſome of our mercenary critics, let me relate two very common and ſimple phœnomena, which, however natural, may ſtill help to evade the anger of ſo tremendous a ſociety, and at the ſame time keep myſelf in the beaten track of an author; viz. that I had no ſooner launch'd from the dark abyſs of conception, to fight my paſſage through a wicked world, and thereby make actual ſin ſupply the place of original, than by repeated exclamations I ſeemed to indicate my ſenſibility of quitting a very comfortable ſnug birth for larger quarters; and by a ſucceſſion of the ſame, gave ample demonſtrations of not being over and above delighted with the change. But when the ceremony of baptiſm was performing, and the parſon began to bedew my face with water, I could not help teſtifying my abhorrence thereof, as if I had divin'd it would not be the laſt time, by many, of my being aſſaulted by that unſtable

element; and which the ſequel will prove was truly verified.

Having thus ſatisfied the aforeſaid Critics*, and thereby convinced the corporation that I am no flincher, and ſcorn to infringe the rules laid down by ſo venerable a body, I proceed to give ſome account of myſelf.—Know then, that I was born in the noble and renowned city of Edinburgh, the metropolis of Scotland, Anno Domini 1734, a quarter paſt one in the morning, the

* The author, upon better information of the proceedings of that reſpectable body, has juſt reaſon to believe that having no connection, acquaintance or intereſt whatſoever with any of them or the bookſellers who pay them their weekly allowance, that the above expedient will have no ſort of weight with them. And that had he the merits of a Cervantes, a Fielding, or a Smollet, which he profeſſes not to have a tythe of, it would not ſecure him from the cenſure of a ſet of men ſo influenced and ſo aſſuming. But as he has the ſatisfaction of knowing that his betters will be conſtrained to keep him company, he promiſes them that he will moſt contentedly, and with the calm ſerenity of a Stoic, ſit down under the weight of their ſentence, and wiſh them a good dinner.

pole

pole elevated fifty-ſix degrees, thirty minutes; Mercury in Virgo poſſeſſing the twelfth houſe, Venus being retrogade to Leo, and in ſquare of Jupiter; denoting a moſt ſalacious diſpoſition, and early dedication to the myſteries of that goddeſs; together with a bold heart, generous inclination, and ſome happy ſcenes intermixt with others the moſt unfortunate.

I am the offspring of a good family in the forementioned city, which for many years had flouriſhed in eccleſiaſtical dignities: by which means a conſiderable ſum of money, that for a ſeries of time had been gradually increaſing thro' the frugal management of my anceſtors, to the amount of ſix thouſand pounds, deſcended to me and my eldeſt brother, the only ſurviving branches of the family, at the death of our parents, who both exchanged this life for a better, leaving us under the tuition of an uncle, who was alſo a principal member of the church militant.

At this juncture he was bordering on the verge of his fiftieth year, proud, ſullen and avaricious; and regarded all men, whom providence had placed in an inferior ſphere of action, as objects not to be put in competition with a perſon of his dignity. His ſtature was ſix foot, and he had imbibed a peculiar habit of ſtooping, very probably from his extraordinary attention to things below; and ſo firmly were his cogitations rooted on periſhable things, that from the moment I came under his care, he put on a pious reſolution to convert my perſonals into the channel of his own coffers. Tho' he was not over and above liberal to any poor and diſtreſſed object, whom he was always ſure to threaten with the houſe of correction in caſe of an attack, yet, in order to make ſome amends for this trivial omiſſion, he took all opportunities of thundering out the virtues of charity from the pulpit, withal exhorting his audience to take ſingular care in the choice of the ob-

objects of their munificence; ſeveral idle vagrants abounding in the country, who, from a principle of lazineſs, he ſaid, rather choſe to beg than work: nay, ſo remarkably nice and ſcrupulous was he in this particular, that very few pence took their departure from his pockets on the occaſion; and a beggar was as great a ſtranger at his unhoſpitable gate, as homely fare at his table. Yet this ſanctified piece of formality found means to procure the character of a very able preacher, and alſo to deceive my deceaſed father into an opinion of his honeſt and diſintereſted behaviour; for on theſe occaſions, by relaxing his features to their utmoſt longitude, and a canting tone that was truly preſbyterian, he did not fail of having due influence on all the old women in the pariſh, whoſe blubbering eyes demonſtrated the ſatisfaction they conceived in his pious ejaculations of laying up treaſures in heaven; while in all probability he was himſelf conſidering the

likelieſt method to place out money on a mortgage, at ſuch intereſt as ſhould not fail to over-run the principal in a few years.——The ſpouſe of this holy teacher had, by the effect of good living, enlarged her perſon to a ſize ſo unwieldy and enormous as is ſcarce credible, the circumference of which I found, by an accurate menſuration of her ſtays, to be two yards three quarters, wanting ſeven eighths of an inch: and ſo much were her whole faculties immerſed in the unreſtrained indulgence of Epicurean pleaſures, that ſhe ſeemed to pay very little regard to the repeated doctrines of ſelf-denial, which her governor uſed to enforce with an emphaſis little ſhort of abſolute command. And it ſeems the good man, by the extraordinary increaſe of his rib, had the mortification to ſee himſelf excluded from all farther communication with her outward woman: and really her latitude and longitude correſponded in ſo loving a manner, as to bear the ſame pro-

proportion that theſe degrees of comprehenſion exhibit on the equator, while her face reſembled a ſouth-eaſt moon in a gale of wind, three quarters old; with the addition of ſuch a ponderous chin, as, for matter of ſubſtance, might have made a reaſonable diſh of lab-ſcous to a man of war's barge-crew.

Whether it was owing to the natural turn of our tempers, which at this time began to manifeſt themſelves in my brother and me in a ſeries of boyiſh tricks and amuſements, which in England would be looked upon as ſo many ſallies of a pregnant wit and lively imagination, but in that pure and ſanctified ſpot are eſteemed the early dawnings of a vicious habit; or whether, which is more probable, my uncle could not brook the ſight of two ſuch obſtacles betwixt himſelf and his darling mammon, I cannot ſay; but we had not been three months in the family, before he ſent my brother to ſea under

the direction of his brother-in-law, who then commanded a ſloop of war on the northern ſtation, and contented himſelf for the preſent by ſending me to a country boarding-ſchool, with the maſter of which he had great ſway, on account of his having been placed there by his particular intereſt and recommendation.—Accordingly in a few days I was pack'd off, bag and baggage, and on my arrival in the country, could not help making many mortifying compariſons between my preſent ſituation and my former happy ſtate under the influence of my mother; which were conſiderably increaſed upon being ſummoned to breakfaſt the next morning, when, inſtead of a ſalutary diſh of tea or coffee, and ſome hot roll and butter, to which I had been hitherto accuſtomed, a ponderous bowl of lobberdominion, compoſed of oat-meal and ſhorn-down cabbages, was ſet upon the table, and ſurrounded by my fellow-boarders, who devour'd it with as much

much eagerneſs, as if it had been the moſt delicate viands that are to be found at Guildhall on a Lord-mayor's day. For my part, notwithſtanding my utmoſt efforts to the contrary, I could not conceal my chagrin on the occaſion; but throwing aſide my ſpoon, gave way to the anguiſh that oppreſſed my boſom, in a plentiful ſhower of tears. During the courſe of this diſtillation, my maſter entered, and perceiving me at the above exerciſe, exclaimed in an exaſperated tone of voice, 'So, young man, I find you want 'ſome mother's milk ſqueezed out of 'your noſe, and are lamenting the loſs 'of your wiſhy-waſhy tea; but an ac'quaintance with my gibbons will 'teach you not to deſpiſe wholeſome 'food, and ſet up your piping here.' So ſaying, he ſeized me by the throat, as a hungry wolf does a trembling lamb, and dragging me to a deſk hard by, imprinted ſuch a leſſon of obedience and reſignation on my poſteriors, as remained

mained in pretty viſible characters for near a month, which had ſuch an effect on me, that I took care to conceal whatever diſpleaſed me ever after.—What this diſpenſer of ſtripes meant by his gibbons, was a leathern thong, ſplit in two places, and about eighteen inches in length, which he generally carried in his pocket, for the convenience of correcting his ſcholars, and which he frequently ſteep'd in ſtale urine, in order to its having the more influence on their buttocks.—Being now thoroughly inſtituted in the myſteries of the gibbons, we kept up a pretty tolerable correſpondence together for ſome time, till by the frequency of our intercourſe, it began to have no more effect on my well-diſciplined buff, than a fly would have on the back of a camel, or a cock-roach on a corn-field; and at the end of nine months time, I congratulated myſelf with great joy, on my utter inſenſibility to its farther inſinuations.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

I make great progreſs in the claſſicks, and am conſtituted cenſor of the ſchool.—Carry my authority with a high hand, which brings on a conſpiracy againſt me.—They effect my diſgrace with the preceptor.—I am diſcarded my poſt with infamy.

DURING all this time, from a principle of ſelf-pride, leſt my comrades ſhould get before me in the article of learning, I applied myſelf with great diligence to my book, and in twelve months more had made conſiderable progreſs in the claſſicks; ſo that I had now leiſure to make ſeveral obſervations on the ſtate of our family, which an inordinate attention to my ſtudies hitherto had occaſioned me partly to overlook. It conſiſted of my maſter, his wife and daughter, ſeveral men and women ſervants, twenty gentlemen's

men's ſons in quality of boarders, and a very handſome girl, who was niece to my maſter, and of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak more hereafter. Mr.—— whom, for reaſons of ſtate, I ſhall hereafter diſtinguiſh by the name of Syntax, was turned of fifty, and profeſſed the moſt rigid preſbyterian principles: he was moroſe, proud and revengeful; and when attacked with a fit of the gout, to the tyranny of which he was frequently ſubject, he raged like a lion in the toils, which was as ſure a ſign to his ſcholars of a general flogging, as Muley Abdallah, emperor of Fez, was to his infatuated ſubjects of ſome diſmal carnage, when he arrayed himſelf in his bloody-colour'd robes. His wife was what is commonly termed a good ſort of a woman, and made us ſome amends by the affableneſs of her diſpoſition and ſweetneſs of her temper, for the rough uſage we generally received from the ſurly hands of our governor, who, beſides the profits he drew from his ſchool,

received

received alſo no inconſiderable addition to his finances, by acting the part of clerk to the pariſh; and on Sundays would chant forth the melodious tranſlations of Sternhold and Hopkins with ſuch feeling energy, as fully demonſtrated the ſatisfaction he conceived in diſplaying the remarkable ſtrength of his lungs at thoſe years. As for his daughter, ſhe was remarkable for nothing ſo much as for her pious reſignation to the will of her father, who every now and then would inflict ſome wholeſome diſcipline on her brawn for the good of her inward woman; the which ſhe bore with all the marks of becoming ſubmiſſion.

I had now advanced greatly in my knowledge of the Latin tongue, and could read the moſt difficult authors with the utmoſt freedom and eaſe; which ſo ingratiated me with old Syntax, that I bore the chief place in his good graces, and was in a ſhort time ad-

degrees at the univ
buſineſs to read pra
portion out taſks to
claſſes, and inſpect
the whole communit
indolence or inatten
dies, I might acquai
ſame; who, in ſuch
rung ſuch a peal on th
the ſound of it ſeemi
their ears for a month a
from my frequent obſe
behaviour, and the re
made, I had reaſon to
the delight he took i
could proceed from n
an extremity of cruelty
of diſpoſition

bout, that he took no pleaſure in the puniſhment of an offender; his eyes plainly gave his tongue the lie, by their double increaſe of vivacity on the occaſion. And for my own part, I was ſo elevated at the reſpect the inferior ſcholars paid me in my new ſtation, that before one month was expired, there was not a ſingle boy of them but had undergone a tripple chaſtiſement at my particular inſtigation; and ſo rapaciouſly did I proceed in the execution of my office, that I became an object of hatred to the whole ſchool: and it was their unanimous opinion, that unleſs they could effect my diſgrace with the preceptor, there would be no ſtaying there any longer. Accordingly, they devoted their leiſure-hours to the ſearching oût for expedients, to bring about their intended purpoſe, and at laſt hit upon the following. There was at this time at our ſchool a young lad whoſe father was a conſiderable farmer in the neighbourhood, who every

every now and then made Syntax a preſent of a new plough-ſhare, and ſometimes a dozen or two of capons, in order to be favourable to his ſon Will, whom he deſigned for the church, and looked upon as a youth of a very promiſing genius. This behaviour did not fail of having due weight with a man of my maſter's diſpoſition, who accordingly promiſed to exert his utmoſt endeavours to make Will a finiſh'd ſcholar, tho' nature had denied him talents adapted to ſuch an undertaking, and furniſhed him with brains caſt in the mould of a ploughman, for which ſhe had originally deſigned him. This booby, by meer dint of diurnal and nocturnal application, had advanced ſo far in claſſical pretenſions, as to have got into Cæſar's commentaries; but whether owing to the pedagogue's impatience in hurrying him to read authors before he underſtood the firſt principles of the language in which they were wrote, or that ſuch intenſe ſtudy was

not

not calculated for the meridian of his ſluggiſh intellects, is uncertain: but ſo it was, that his digeſtive faculties were by no means equal to the quantity of Latin he daily ſwallowed; and in ſpite of all the maſter's endeavours to the contrary, he knew no more of the principles of that polite tongue, than a cow does of a ſign-poſt. But to return: him they accordingly pitched upon to effect my diſgrace; having furniſhed him with inſtructions to challenge me to a ſingle combat the firſt time I ſhould take the liberty to reprimand him for negligence or inattention; in which caſe, whether he came off conqueror or not, it would anſwer the ſame end, as the maſter would certainly take the part of his favourite, to the diſcharging me from the executive part of a cenſor, and compliment me with a good drubbing to boot. This deſign he ſoon after put in execution; in conſequence of which I dealt him ſuch a confounded blow in the chops, as quickly diſlodged three

amazing vociferation.

The pedagogue, who v
way off, alarmed at this c
ran with the utmoſt haſte
of battle, and perceiving
in ſo bloody a condition,
with rage, and demanded
choaked with fury, who
dared to uſe the boy in t
under his roof? when ui
from all hands that I wa
quent, he flew at me with t
tyger, and endeavoured to
a deſk often appropriated t
poſes, in order to enjoy
more unmoleſted. But I

he intended me. This he took as a moſt heinous aggravation of my crime, and calling together half a dozen of the ſtouteſt boys to his aſſiſtance, I was ſoon overpowered, and bound to the whipping-poſt, where I underwent a moſt ſevere laſhing, to the extreme joy of the whole community, ſo cordially was I beloved by them; tho' neither my maſter, or thoſe that aſſiſted him in my puniſhment, had much reaſon in the end to congratulate themſelves upon the victory they had obtained over me, for I ſo annoyed my adverſaries by a dexterous management of my feet, that ſome of them had reaſon to remember them a conſiderable time after. As for Syntax, I found means to harraſs him ſo effectually in thoſe parts, where the gout, his conſtant companion, took up its reſidence, that I obliged him to hobble off the premiſſes as faſt as his feet would let him, roaring all the way like a town-bull.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

By the aſſiſtance of an acquaintance I accompliſh a ſingular piece of diverſion on my maſter, and make him ridiculous through the whole pariſh.

BEING thus once more on a level with thoſe over whom I had but a little before carried my authority in ſo high a manner, I bore my reſtraint but irkſomely, and reſolved the firſt opportunity to do this tanner of hides ſuch a piece of ſervice, as ſhould in ſome meaſure retaliate his late favours. One day, being the anniverſary of his birth, he reſolved to entertain ſome neighbours over a bottle extraordinary, and which was always reſerved for ſome ſuch remarkable occaſion; in conſequence whereof Mr. Tickletext the paſtor, Mr. Sweepdeſk the churchwarden, and Mr. Swagbelly a neighbouring farmer, were invited. I was appriſed of this ſome

ſome time before, and reſolved not to let ſlip ſo favourable an opportunity to effect my long-intended purpoſe. I communicated my deſign to a young fellow, whoſe name was Dick Savage, an apothecary's 'prentice hard by, who was tranſported at this rare opportunity to exert his natural talents, always prone to miſchief, and in concert, we projected ſuch a notable piece of revenge as might have done credit to older heads. On the night of the entertainment, we found means to convey ourſelves into the room a little before the company arrived, when Dick drew upon the wainſcoat various figures and characters in liquid phoſphorus; whilſt I took an opportunity to preſs into the bottom of their tobacco pipes a ſmall quantity of moiſtened gunpowder.

Being all ſeated, the tables furniſhed with various edibles, and their hearts replete with joy, they began to toſs the can about with ſurprizing velocity, while

while the vibration of their under-jaws repreſented the idea of perpetual motion. At laſt, the victuals were removed, the pipes lighted, and a very curious diſcourſe ſet on foot about the nature of lights and colours; from whence, by a tranſition no ways uncommon, they deſcended to examine the origin of Cain's mark, and the complection of blacks in the Weſt-Indies; and Tickletext was in the midſt of a very learned and elaborate harangue on that ſubject, when the fiery element in their pipes approaching too near the confines of the gunpowder, which was by no means diſpoſed to brook ſo near an alliance; the exploſion was univerſal, whilſt the tables, chairs, and all the materials thereon contained, now tumbled about the room in moſt tumultuous diſorder. During this ſcene, while all was dark, and the dons in wonderful agitation at the ſingularity of ſo ſtrange an event, Dick, who had taken care to diſguiſe himſelf, as I had alſo

alſo done, ſuddenly ſtept into the room and ſet fire to the phoſphorus, which inſtantly conveyed to the aſtoniſhed opticks of the company theſe characters in liquid flame: "You are all damn'd "for this unſeemly prophanation."

Confounded beyond meaſure at ſo unaccountable a phænomenon, the apartment reſounded with hollow groans, which were conſiderably augmented by the application of our feet to the ſeveral trunks of the proſtrate individuals, more eſpecially of Syntax's, which we belaboured ſo heartily, that in the extremity of anguiſh he roared like a criminal on the rack; and by his ſuperior exclamations and ſtrength of lungs, ſoon brought the whole family to the place of action, but not before Dick had made his eſcape, and I had thrown a large quantity of brimſtone into the fire, by way of heightening the ſolemnity. As it was impoſſible for them to entertain the leaſt thought of

being ſerved this trick by any thing human, ſo on the firſt approach of light it was actually the moſt diverting ſight in nature to perceive ſo ludicrous an appearance as now preſented itſelf to the aſtoniſhed eyes of the ſpectators, who were all confounded beyond meaſure at the occaſion of ſo extraordinary an event: nor did the ſmell of brimſtone, which ſtill raged with great violence, diſpel their apprehenſions of ſtill being under the ſame roof with the devil.

After ſome time, my maſter recovered himſelf ſo far as to pronounce in a hollow tone, "We are all d——n'd!" which was inſtantly aſſented to by the affrighted paſtor, who had not as yet recovered his faculties of perception, by the word, "Amen!" while the bowels of Swagbelly, unuſed to ſuch rude inſults as they had ſuſtained in the late ſhock, and in a ſtate of univerſal relaxation, ſounded their accord to the fore-

foregoing comment, in a voice peculiar to themſelves, attended by ſo copious a diſcharge of effluvia, as quickly ſupplied the place of the brimſtone, with a ſcent not quite ſo piercing, but altogether as diſagreeable.

At this juncture it is impoſſible to deſcribe the various phænomena that appeared upon their countenances in a ſucceſſion of ghaſtly repreſentations, which conveyed to my imagination the condition of the damned as deſcribed by Milton; while the whiteneſs of their complexions out-rivalled the ſhrowd of a fleeting ghoſt at moon-light. Nay, ſo confounded were they, upon a thorough recollection of the hand-writing on the wainſcot, and the diſmal exploſion of ſulphurous matter which ſtill ſounded in their ears, and alſo gave their olfactory organs no ſmall uneaſineſs, that they concluded they were haunted by the devil; and reſolved not to expoſe themſelves to his farther ma-

chinations by going home that night, but remain in conſtant prayer till morning: at the ſame time ſtrictly charging the whole family to be extremely ſilent in regard to the late affair; which, however, Dick found means to propagate, with many aggravating circumſtances through all the pariſh, to the no ſmall confuſion of the principals concerned.

In the morning, underſtanding that my maſter intended to accompany his gueſts part of the way home, I took occaſion to ſtep unperceived into the ſtable, and juſt before their departure, beſmeared the poſteriors of their horſes under the tails with ſome turpentine, which I had procured for that purpoſe. They had no ſooner mounted than the pedagogue, imputing the ſkittiſhneſs of his horſe to the abundance of his mettle, humoured his prances for ſome time, to give his neighbours an opportunity of commending his horſemanſhip; but at laſt,

laſt, the fiery ſteed, not digeſting his bum-poſſet kindly, reared his hinder-legs to a ſtupendous heighth, and diſmounted his rider by a method rather too precipitate for his gouty ſupporters; while his jolly viſiters, without the ceremony of "Good by t' ye," ſcampered off at a furious rate, imagining ten thouſand devils at their heels; and before they reached home, had all of them, to a man, undergone the neceſſary operation of cold bathing in ſome ponds contiguous to the highway; a circumſtance admirably adapted for the more effectually bracing up their relaxed ſolids, ſo miſerably weakened by their late fright. In the mean time old Syntax, in conſequence of his fall, was obliged to betake himſelf to his bed, which he kept for a month afterwards, to the great joy of myſelf and all his dependants.

CHAP. IV.

The deſires of youth grow ſtrong upon me.—I fall in love with my maſter's niece.—Commence a very intereſting amour, and carry on a midnight correſpondence.

THE completion of this adventure, ſo much to my ſatisfaction, made me look upon myſelf in a much higher light than ever: I began to fancy myſelf more of a man than any boy of my age in the ſchool, and ſupported my pretenſions to that character by ſome natural acquirements which as yet appeared upon none other of my cotemporaries. My chin was graced with a few downy hairs, which I fondly dignified with the name of beard; my voice was altering to a graver tone; my muſcular ſtrength was greatly augmented, and a more ſprightly comportment accompanied my whole individual.

dual. I was alſo conſiderably advanced in my ſixteenth year, and from the healthy ſituation of the country, the exerciſes of riding, and other rural diverſions, of which I was particularly fond, had imbibed a large ſhare of ſtrength and ſpirits, ſo that it is not at all ſurprizing, that even at this early age my boſom became ſuſceptible of ſenſations, of a nature far more intereſting than any boyiſh amuſements I had hitherto been acquainted with; while my ripening conſtitution began to diſplay very evident tokens of approaching manhood, by the ſuggeſtion of certain longing deſires and pantings after ſomewhat, I was fully convinced muſt be very eſſential to my happineſs. That woman, lovely woman! was the apparent cauſe of this, there was no room to doubt; for upon the leaſt approach of that divine ſex, my ſoul was inſtantly in arms, my heart dilated with the moſt rapturous ſenſations, and every nerve beat high with tenfold vigour.

I have already obſerved, that there was in our family a young girl, a near relation of my maſter's wife, whom hitherto I had taken very little notice of, but of late began to regard with peculiar attention, and fancied I perceived numberleſs charms in her every word and geſture. She was indeed a very handſome girl, tall and well ſhaped, and had ſuch an air of ſweetneſs and ſimplicity diffuſed in her lovely countenance, as were extremely captivating, and prejudiced every beholder in her favour at firſt ſight: no wonder then that my natural deſires and warmth of blood raiſed her in my imagination to the moſt perfect of her ſex, and heightened my adoration of her to a degree little ſhort of enthuſiaſtic rapture. I was ſo taken up in the contemplation of her beauties, that I entirely relinquiſhed all puerile amuſements, and from a thoughtleſs giddy youth became a perfect mope, and moved about as it were merely mechanical.

nical. My charming Sukey Patterſon now ingroſſed my whole attention; and when I was denied the pleaſure of her company and converſation by any untimely interruption, I was perpetually uneaſy, and longed for the happy opportunity to tell her how much I admired her. The lovely girl ſoon perceived my attachment, and repaid my aſſiduity to pleaſe her, by every innocent endearment in her power, and I ſoon perceived with unexpreſſible pleaſure, that her ſentiments were as tender in regard to me, as mine could be to her. As yet we had been as free in point of any criminal indulgence as the child unborn: but as the poet ſomewhere obſerves, "Nature is nature, "let the wiſe ſay what they will;" it is next to impoſſible, that two young people of different ſexes, and warm complexions, whoſe boiling veins call loudly for enjoyment, can long be reſtrained within the bounds of celibacy, and content themſelves in taſting the

ever notions ſome pe
of that paſſion, as be
ſpiritual, and foundec
delicate to be intermix
grovelling ideas, or r
tifications of ſenſe,
that in the conſtitution
rit and fleſh are ſo ag
together, that the refi
one are abſolutely nec
alive the ſenſations of th
ſo it was with Sukey
both loved to an extrem
and longed to taſte that
known happineſs, that wa
municated to each other
courſe of the ſexes ; and wh

is not to be expected but things were ripening very faſt to a favourable criſis.

> Full ſixteen ſummers then had crown'd my youth,
> With teeming health o'erflowing; gay deſire,
> And twenty thouſand little Cupids play'd
> In wanton whiſpers round my melting heart.
> Each tubrous nerve, big with the ſwelling tide
> Of ripening manhood, to my ſoul convey'd
> Strange wiſhes; while the channels of my blood
> Expanded wide, to let the dewy ſtream
> Of thrilling joy in liquid rills deſcend.

As for Sukey, ſhe was at that period of life, when the god of love diſplays his pleaſing influence on virgin hearts, and the fluttering imagination teems with rapturous deluſions. But having thus illuſtrated my own feelings at ſuch a criſis, by giving ſome indifferent verſes of my own, I ſhall endeavour to make the reader ſome amends by preſenting him with a paſſage from Thomſon's ſeaſons, admirably adapted to the caſe of my lovely fair one in a very intereſting ſituation.

Now

Now from her virgin cheek a freſher bloom
Shoots, leſs and leſs, the live carnation round.
Her lips bluſh deeper ſweets; ſhe breathes of youth:
The ſhining moiſture ſwells into her eyes
In brighter flow; her wiſhing boſom heaves
With palpitations wild; kind tumults ſeize
Her veins, and all her yielding ſoul is love.

But, notwithſtanding I had plied my Sukey inceſſantly for ſome time with all my artillery of love, yet I could never bring her to conſent to ſo cloſe a correſpondence as I could have wiſhed; till one time, taking a walk together, and enjoying the delightful pleaſures of a ſummer's evening, I played my part ſo well, that love and inclination getting the better of all her timorous apprehenſions, I took the advantage of the critical minute, and taſted in her lovely arms thoſe joys that baffle all deſcription, and of which the unexperienced can have but a very faint idea. The ſcene of our joys was a neighbouring corn-field, where a thouſand ears were wit-

witneſs to our mutual raptures: but ſuch a place being very unfit to proſecute our future loves in, we agreed to conſult upon another at our next meeting, and go home different ways for fear of creating ſuſpicion; and after a repetition of the former dalliance, in which it ſhall ſuffice to ſay, we experienced the moſt ecſtatic delights, we parted for that time, highly ſatisfied at the favourable iſſue of our afternoon's ramble. For my own part, I was ſo captivated with the joys I had taſted, and ſo taken up in projecting means to carry on the ſame charming intercourſe, that I paid very little attention to any thing beſides; and never ceaſed, till I had fairly laid a rational ſcheme for putting the ſame into execution.

The bed-chamber where we boarders lay was always locked up at bed-time by the pedagogue; which precaution had aroſe from ſome of them formerly going out in the night, and ravaging a neigh-

neighbouring gentleman's orchard; the doors were for this reaſon always ſecured preciſely at ten, to prevent ſuch excurſions for the future. This chamber was only ſeparated from the public ſchool by a thin partition, betwixt which there had formerly been a communication by the help of a door-way, which from ſome late repairs had long been locked up as uſeleſs. But love ſoon made me take notice of this thoroughfare, which I had never before obſerved, and to endeavour to convert it to my own advantage. I prudently concluded, that if I could but fall upon a method to have the command of this paſſage, it would be no difficult matter to find my way through a window in the ſchool, and at no great diſtance from the ground, to the arms of my miſtreſs, who lay in an apartment far enough ſecluded from any in the family, to be in the leaſt danger of a diſcovery from that quarter.

I at-

I attentively examined the door, which was in a dark part of the room, occaſioned ſo by a ſtanding bed being newly erected near it, and finding the ſtaple very much weakened by the conſumer of all things, eaſily drew it out; and greaſing the hinges to prevent their telling tales, faſtened it by the help of a crooked nail till further uſe. I acquainted Sukey with this lucky diſcovery, who was frightened at the riſk I run of being detected; but who nevertheleſs, at my repeated inſtigation, agreed to receive me that very night. My mewing like a cat was the ſignal agreed upon for my admittance, but with a particular whining tone, the better to diſtinguiſh it from a reality, as thoſe creatures abounded very much in the neighbourhood. Having thus concerted every thing to the beſt advantage, I waited impatiently for the hour of twelve; which was no ſooner echoed through the dormitory by an old crazy clock, that might have been reckoned a to-

a tolerable piece of mechaniſm in the reign of queen Elizabeth; but devouring time had made ſuch incroachment on its ſolids, not to mention the outward caſe, that it looked like an old burial cheſt, dug from a charnel houſe, that a broker in Moorfields, tho' none of the leaſt ſcraping animals in the world, would have diſdained to lumber the back of his brawny porter with it, at the trifling expence of a queen Ann's ſhilling: however, it was of too much importance for Syntax to diſpenſe with; as by help of that and the ſun, he made a ſhift to regulate his hours of relaxation. No ſooner, I ſay, had this antiquated piece of machinery ſaluted my willing ears with the ſonorous knell of twelve, than I forſook my pillow, and deſcending to the ground through the forementioned window, flew on the wings of love to the place of aſſignation, not without dreadful apprehenſions of meeting ſome of thoſe midnight-ſpectres, which,

At

At this ſolemn hour, quit their dreary graves,
And in pale moon light glide through church-yards, fraught
With diſcoveries of weal or woe to man.

Upon giving the ſignal agreed upon, I was quickly admitted by my Sukey, who tenderly chided me for my long ſtay, and proteſted her fear of my being diſcovered had almoſt deprived her of her ſenſes; but jumping into bed, I quickly ſilenced her apprehenſions by the influence of a cloſe embrace, which had ſuch an effect on the love-ſick maid, that after breathing out in the moſt melting ſtrains, "Ah! "my dear! — this is too much!" ſhe fainted away in my arms in a tranſport of ecſtatic joy; while I, all diſſolved in the rapturous bliſs, imprinted on her ruby lips, that glowed with complacency and love, the ſenſe I had of her divine perfections. This ſenſibility of my dear girl operated more powerfully on my amorous conſtitution, than the moſt precious compoſition of incentives, or bal-

baſſamick viper-drops, does on a ſuperannuated Alderman, when he flies his withered rib, and ſeeks for relaxation from the cares of the world in the arms of his youthful miſtreſs.

We continued thus in mutually partaking the choiceſt bleſſings which the god of love never fails to beſtow on his votaries, when he finds them yielding with becoming ardor to the dictates of glowing blood and ſtimulating nature, till the watchful cock, that faithful monitor to the approach of day, rouſed us from our ſcene of bliſs, and obliged me, after a parting embrace, to evacuate the premiſſes for fear of a diſcovery; but not without a thouſand tender aſſurances of renewing the pleaſing converſation the next night. I had the good fortune to return back before any of the family were ſtirring; and faſtening the door and window, I retired to bed, where nature, oppreſſed with the unaccuſtomed fatigue and exhauſtment of

ſpi-

ſpirits, ſoon yielded to accept a reinforcement by the kindly mediation of balmy ſleep; and I gave myſelf up to its dictates, with a mind perfectly pleaſed in having brought this affair to ſuch a favourable criſis.

CHAP. V.

In my ſecond excurſion I meet with an accidental rencounter with Syntax.—Effect another curious piece of revenge on the pedagogue.—Am detected, and obliged to fly the boarding-ſchool for ever.

THE next evening, having been locked up as before, my maſter retired under a full perſuaſion that all were ſafe for that night; and not a little glad he had prevented an excurſion upon the 'Squire's orchard, which by the approach of the ſeaſon, he had great reaſon to apprehend. But ſome of

of us, at this juncture, had quite another ſort of appetite than to be eating of pears or apples; and I could not help ſmiling at his ill-concerted precaution, which, from a principle of reſentment, made me reſolve, as ſoon as Morpheus ſhould lay his ſilken bands on my aſſociates, and lock up their ſenſes by the inchantments of downy repoſe, to repair to the preceding rendezvous, and paſs away ſome few hours much more agreeably than in ſupine ſlumber.

Of this I was no ſooner informed by the uncouth ſounds that whiſtled through their noſtrils, and attacked my organs of hearing from all quarters, than, without loading myſelf with any other accoutrements than a huge white night-cap, I ſallied forth in my ſhirt, and with haſty ſtrides ſought the manſion that contained, in my imagination, the very quinteſſence of all earthly perfection; with whom having paſſed the night

night in the moſt conſummate pleaſure, and given the dear girl ſeveral freſh inſtances of my inviolable attachment, I made what haſte I could towards my own apartment. But in aſcending a neceſſary-houſe, over which it was requiſite to paſs, before I could reach the window; juſt as I had gained the top, and was making a bold puſh to catch hold of the ſell, unfortunately my foot ſlipt, and I deſcended with ſuch violence on the cover of this fabrick, that, not being calculated for the tamely ſtomaching of ſuch rude inſults, it quickly gave way, and conveyed me to the ground with a celerity, that for a time deprived me of all ſenſation: but, I was quickly rouſed from this ſtate of bliſsful inſenſibility, by the exploſion of a diſmal groan, which ſeemed to iſſue in a manner from a perſon in his laſt agonies.

Surprized at ſo alarming a circumſtance, it was with ſome difficulty I gained

gained my feet; when, to my infinite aſtoniſhment, I perceived old Syntax on his knees, half buried in the ruins I had made, and putting up fervent prayers to heaven, in a ſucceſſion of pious ejaculations.

After he had indulged this motion of the ſpirit for ſome time, turning to me with a look that ſufficiently denoted the agitations of his inward man; he demanded to know, in a voice ſcarce articulate, who I was, that by aſſuming a human form ſeemed to indicate ſome important meſſage nearly relating himſelf. 'If, continued he, thou art the 'ſoul of ſome departed pariſhioner, who 'has taken this method to make a diſ-'covery of any hidden treaſure, ſpeak 'freely; and be aſſured, that before 'yonder bright luminary, whoſe golden 'beams now tinge the eaſtern horizon, 'ſhall have withdrawn his all-chearing 'influence from this ſublunary globe, 'my unweary diligence ſhall not fail

'to

'to ſet thy unhappy ſoul at reſt.—But
'on the contrary, if thou art one of
'thoſe wicked ſpirits, that, in contempt
'of the moſt High, have broke looſe
'from thy infernal priſon, and art
'come with intent to ſubvert the order
'and good management of my family
'by thy diabolical machinations, I
'charge thee to be gone; leſt, by vir-
'tue of my holy function, (tho' by the
'by he was only clerk to the pariſh) I
'laſh thy unfettered ſoul with tenfold
'horror back to thoſe adamantine chains
'and penal fires thou haſt forſaken;
'and with pangs unfelt before, revenge
'this indignity and outrage thou haſt
'dared to commit on the perſon of
'God's vicar.'

When he had finiſhed this wonderful exorciſm, which he thought powerful enough to ſhake hell from its inmoſt centre, regarding me with a look of infinite ſuperiority, he ſeemed to wait with no little impatience for a diſcloſure

ſure of thoſe ſecrets, wherewith he imagined me to be fraught.

Tho' I could ſcarce contain laughing in his face at the concluſion of this bombaſtical piece of rhetoric; yet having but one card to play, in order to prevent a diſcovery, I laid an embargo on my riſible faculties, and ſcrewing up my countenance into a violent diſtortion of features, I made him the following reply in a ſtern, hollow voice, ſuitable to the character I aſſumed.

'I am no departed pariſhioner come 'to enrich you with his hidden trea- 'ſures; neither am I the devil come to 'moleſt the œconomy of your family; 'but I am the ſoul of the tyrant He- 'liogabylus, who, affronted that a pri- 'vate man ſhould dare to cope with 'him in the luxurioufneſs of his table, 'has taken the trouble of a voyage 'from hell through the north-weſt 'paſſage, to leave with you a laſting 'memorial of his diſpleaſure.' So ſaying,

ſaying, I gave him a moſt confounded blow on the ſtomach, by way of revenge for the many flogging-bouts he had formerly complimented me with. He had no ſooner received this token of remembrance, than all his boaſted courage forſook him, and he fell down at my feet, roaring out with all the marks of genuine fear and diſtraction; while I, taking the advantage of his preſent diſpoſition of mind, at one bold puſh reached the window, and after making all faſt, had the good fortune to ſlip to bed unperceived of any one.

By this time the family were ſtirring, and ſoon after he was found in a very unſavoury condition by one of the ſervants, who was accidentally paſſing by in his way to the ſtable, and by whom, with proper aſſiſtants, he was carried to the houſe in a ſtate of utter inſenſibility: ſo much had his late fright overpowered his faculties. Soon after, his daughter opened the door of our in-

cloſure, and informed us that her father had ſeen a terrible apparition that morning in the back-yard. I affected the utmoſt ſurprize, and aſked her in a faultering voice, if the houſe was haunted.

My companions were very ſenſibly affected at this inſinuation; and obſerved, that if it were true, they would immediately ſolicit an audience of leave to return to their fathers homes, rather than run the riſk of encountering the devil upon any the leaſt excurſion after ſun-ſet.

When we were all dreſſed, and, according to cuſtom, had performed the ceremony of ablution, we agreed to go to our tyrant's apartment, and pay him our compliments of condolence, the rather with a view to be informed of the particulars of his late fright, than any regard to the being certified of his health; a circumſtance of very little im-

importance with us his moſt affectionate pupils. On our approach, it was obvious to every one, that the apparition had wrought a moſt phyſical effect on his conſtitution, in the double capacity of a cathartick and an emetick, by the appearance of certain relicts ſcattered on the ground, between the back-yard and his bed.

He received the ſpeech of condolence we made him, with a countenance not quite ſo ſhocking as he generally put on, and even condeſcended to teſtify his approbation of our proceeding, by a moſt gracious nod, and leave to conſecrate the whole day to our ſeveral amuſements, ſince he found himſelf, he ſaid, utterly unqualified for carrying on the buſineſs of the ſchool, after what had happened, for that day. And, indeed, ſo diſpirited was he at this inſtance of Satan's malignity, that I ventured to take upon me the office of a comforter, by inſinuating that theſe were

indeed very terrible doings; but at the ſame time telling him, that to a man of his intereſt and power, it would be no difficult matter to take ample revenge of the fiend, by commencing a proſecution againſt him in the eccleſiaſtical court for an aſſault and battery: and, indeed, by the anſwer he made me, I had reaſon to conclude, that his fright had operated more ways than one, and relaxed his brains, as well as his bowels; for he replied: 'True, my child, I will 'take your advice, and I will alſo lay 'this affair before the ſynod of Glaſ-'gow.'

The rumour of this adventure ſoon got air, and was, by the induſtry of Dick, quickly propagated through the neighbourhood in the moſt tragick colours, and afforded matter of no ſmall ſpeculation among the clodpates of the vicinity. Nay, ſome of thoſe whoſe preciſe looks and ſagacious obſervations intituled them to the diſtinguiſhing

ing appellation of d——nd clever fellows, ſcrupled not to aver, that the aforeſaid apparition could be no other than the ſoul of one John Dawſon, a mealman, who was lately deceaſed, and whoſe unfair dealings when alive, they very much feared, had ſubjected his unhappy ſpirit to a ſtate of reſtleſsneſs till the reſurrection.

But to return:—By ſeveral uncommon ſymptoms in Sukey, I had reaſon to believe I ſhould ſoon be preſented with a living teſtimony of my manhood; and was even in hopes of diſplaying to our pariſh the ſurpriſing atchievements of ſixteen, which, though attended with ſome church-diſcipline, was a circumſtance that would have been very agreeable to my vanity, had I not been checked from the pleaſing ſuggeſtion by recollecting, that however ſoothing ſuch an affair might be to my own pride, it would be attended by very ſerious conſequences to her, whoſe

character muſt be inevitably blaſted by a detection.

But whilſt I bent my whole care and ſtudy to evade ſo fatal an inconvenience, I was given to underſtand by a maid-ſervant who lived in the houſe, that ſhe had watched us narrowly for ſome time, and was perfectly acquainted with the nature of our tranſactions, which ſhe would inſtantly make known to the whole family, loading poor Sukey at the ſame time with the moſt abuſive ſcurrility. Alarmed at this unwelcome aſſault, but imagining from certain ſymptoms which I had heretofore diſcovered, that it would be no difficult matter to ward off the impending evil, if certain operations were to be purſued, I made a virtue of neceſſity, and forthwith gave her to underſtand, that her perſon was no way diſagreeable to me; and this I enforced with ſuch powerful arguments, backed by a proper application of the one thing needful, that I

ſoon

ſoon put to ſilence all farther threatenings for that time. But in a courſe of about three months experiments of this ſort, I was conſtrained to make ſuch frequent application of my ſpecifick, that my vigour failed me, my colour fled, and I was in a very fair way of ſoon ending my days by a hectick: ſo true it is, that a too frequent and early addiction to ſuch exerciſes, reſtrain the growth of the individual, and unnerve the man.

It was in vain to make any remonſtrances to her on the virtues of ſelf-denial; ſhe evaded all my expoſtulations by upbraiding me with my attachment to Sukey; and was even ſo unconſcionable as to exact my promiſe of never having farther communication with her for the future; which, when I refuſed to grant, ſhe flew from me with all the rage of an incens'd virago, and muttering inarticulate threats of revenge in the language of an infernal fury. Being

thus aſſured of her intentions, and dreading the conſequences of a diſcovery, well knowing the expoſal of this affair would alſo bring to light the adventure of the tobacco pipes, and that of Heliogabylus, (for I had fooliſhly entruſted her with the ſecret of both) I was determined to fruſtrate the effects of her reſentment, and at the ſame time put an end to all farther intercourſe with ſo inſatiable a creature, by leaving the ſchool directly; which I accordingly did, and made the beſt of my way for the capital, without having ſo much as the melancholy ſatisfaction of a parting ſalute from my poor Sukey, and not without ſhedding ſome tears at leaving a place where I had experienced ſuch a viciſſitude of youthful amuſements; but yet glad in the main at thus getting rid of an affair which began to threaten me with the moſt troubleſome conſequences.

CHAP. VI.

Arrive in town.—Am put to an academy.—My aunt is ſeized with a nervous diſorder, which produces ſtrange alterations.—She adopts a new ſyſtem of parſimony.—Expatiates on the wonderful virtues of vegetables; and reduces me, by her ſpecifics, to the verge of a conſumption.

WHEN I entered the city, and found myſelf as it were in a new world, the manifeſt alteration of the ſcene produced a moſt happy effect upon my ſpirits. I could not behold ſo many gay-dreſs'd young ladies without being ſtruck with a very ſenſible emotion, and began to make compariſons with regard to the laſſes of our pariſh, which were very diſadvantageous to their charms.

On my arrival at my uncle's, I found that venerable perſonage in his cloſet,

ſurrounded by an infinite number of pious and polemical authors of the laſt age; from whence, with the aſſiſtance of a little eccleſiaſtical chymiſtry, he was extracting the very quinteſſence of orthodox divinity, in order to ſerve it out by retail, at proper opportunities, for the benefit of all whom it might concern.—He was wonderfully agitated at my unexpected approach, as might be ſeen from the frowns he every now and then regarded me with in the courſe of our dialogue. He took notice, that he had but a little before paid my full quarter's board, and therefore was determined to ſend me back into the country again. However, at length I found means to ſilence all farther animadverſions on that ſubject, by thanking him for the care and pains he had already taken in my education, and hinting my deſire to eaſe him of that trouble for the future, by chooſing new curators.

This

This inſinuation, quite unexpected, produced a moſt ſudden alteration of temper in my favour. He no longer darted his eyebrows upon me in the manner as before, but with a very gracious ſmile, teſtified his approbation of my behaviour hitherto, and let me know, that ſo long as I continued in the ſame tractable diſpoſition, he ſhould think it a pleaſure to fulfil the deſires of my late father in ſuperintending my affairs and education: at the ſame time obſerving, that he intended to put me to an academy, for the better perfecting me in the accompliſhments of a gentleman.——I was exceedingly delighted at this latter part of his harangue, as I thought the word academy carried dignity in the ſound of it; whereas that of boarding-ſchool appeared to me childiſh and trifling, and by no means adapted to my lofty conceptions.

Accordingly I was entered on one the next morning; and in a ſhort time made con-

of ſome conſequenc
remembrance of Su
hopes in a ſhort tin
figure among the la
ment of whoſe agree
converſation I vainly
admirably adapted.

But amidſt all this
when I turned my ey
had no reaſon to con
on my late change, eit
circumſtances.——Unh
my worthy aunt was a
ſeized with a violent deje
attended by ſo general a
the nerves of her brain,
boured at once under th

effect on her temper, hitherto none of the moſt liberal, that ſhe ſet on foot a very laudable and praiſe-worthy reſolution of abridging two thirds of the family expences, in order to prolong the evil day to the uttermoſt.

This happy thought ſhe immediately put in practice: and notwithſtanding all the objections and complaints that were continually made to ſo unwarrantable a proceeding by every individual, ſhe nevertheleſs found means to carry on the ſame with ſuch unceaſing vigour, that in three months time, from a ſtout young fellow of ſeventeen, hale and luſty, I was reduced to a mere ſkeleton. My legs, formerly of gothic conſtruction, were now dwindled into the appearance of drum-ſticks, exhibiting evident tokens of approaching deſolation of the whole animal machine, if not timely ſupported by more invigorating materials than it had been for ſome time accuſtomed to.

While

While I underwent this meagre courſe of diet, more properly adapted to the enfeebled remains of a beau in a ſalivation, than a young country fellow of well-ſtrung nerves, and a healthy conſtitution; I had this conſolation, however, that my intellectual faculties were in no danger to be overpowered by the fumes of indigeſtion, or oppreſſed with vapours from an over-charged ſtomach, and I might certainly at that time cry out with the poet, "a healthy body, "and a mind at eaſe," if a ſpare diet could be any ways conducive to exhilarate the ſpirits, and keep the veſſels clear from noxious crudities; or a man's mind can be ſaid to be at eaſe, which is continually put in remembrance of the cravings of nature, by the ſuggeſtions of a hungry appetite.

In the mean time the old lady, far from putting an end to this infirmary allowance, hugged herſelf in the manifeſt curtailment of her weekly diſburſements,

ments, and was perpetually dunning my ears with her phyſical quotations, from authors both antient and modern, of the ſanative qualities of ſimples.—For this purpoſe, cabbages and turnips had a conſiderable ſpace in the day-book of her weekly preparations; for potatoes ſhe had conceived an infinite veneration; and had found out more virtues in the aſtringent qualities of water, than ever was imbibed by the Royal Society, or the famous doctor Sangrado of Gil Blas diſcovered through the whole courſe of the materia medica.

Nay, to ſuch admirable perfection had ſhe arrived in this phyſical art, that ſhe could demonſtrate to a day, when ſuch and ſuch vegetables would be attended with the moſt benefit to the conſtitution. Peaſe, indeed, ſhe frequently would obſerve, were very ſimple and harmleſs food, provided they were converted into nouriſhment at a proper juncture: but then at their firſt coming

in

in ſeaſon, they were ſo full of moiſt and watery particles, that at ſuch a time nothing in the world could be more prejudicial to a youthful digeſtion. The only time to eat them, ſhe ſaid, was when they ſhould be ſomewhat older, and be reduced to a little more hardneſs and conſiſtency: then, indeed, they might be uſed with pleaſure and benefit, and be a means of ſtrengthening the ſolids by a double increaſe of maſtication; ſo that the only time to eat peaſe was when no body elſe would touch them, that is, when they were hard, withered and ſapleſs, and ſunk at leaſt two thirds in the price: at ſuch a criſis we might eat a belly full of them, and welcome, taking care, however, not to fruſtrate their ſalutary effects upon the habit by the poiſonous infuſion of malt-liquors, which ſhe was uſed to obſerve was one great cauſe of that general declenſion, both in growth and years, which was handed down from father to ſon, and from generation to gene-

generation; till in the end poſterity, ſhe doubted not, would experience the reality of Gulliver's Lilliputians, and become more like pigmies than men. She would frequently affirm, with an emphaſis that almoſt carried conviction in its ſound, that all family compoſitions, wherein pure element was the principal ingredient, ſuch as water-gruel, flummery, broths, and ſmall-beer, were things of themſelves extremely innocent, and at the ſame time could not fail of being attended with the moſt ſalutary conſequences to the human fabrick.

But all theſe flowry animadverſions were loſt upon me. I turned a deaf ear to her moſt pathetic remonſtrances; and by my ſurly behaviour on the occaſion, gave her to underſtand, I was in no humour to adopt this new ſyſtem of philoſophic abſtinence, or indulge her avarice at the expence of my own belly; more eſpecially as the huge circum-

Whether this reply ca
more truth in the conclu
really imagined it did, or
carrying on an argument
oppoſite to every one's exp
concerted her effrontery, is
but ſhe henceforward deſiſte
farther mention of that ſub
tenting herſelf in faithfully
the practical part of her pi
mination, with ſo little abate
I was in a fair way to diſp
the world the genuine appear
moving ſkeleton, without putti
to the unneceſſary trouble of
to ſurgeon's hall for a view o
preſentative.

CHAP. VII.

Am reinforced by a new acquaintance.—He takes notice of my pelican ſituation.—Harangues me on the villainous practices of guardians; and after promiſing to regulate my conduct upon a new plan, introduces me to a ſhopkeeper, who ſupplies me with money on a remarkable footing.

IN this melancholy ſituation I was one day addreſſed by a young fellow of the ſame claſs, who had for ſome time obſerved my dejection, in this manner: 'Look ye, Murray, I am 'amazed that a young fellow of any 'ſpirit ſhould ſkulk about in ſuch a 'lubberly manner, while he might en-'joy life to advantage, and revel with 'freedom uncontrouled in all the joys 'of youth and beauty! But I ſee you 'are a poor pitiful mungrel, and would 'rather be trifling away the precious 'mo-

'moments in conſtruing typho, typſo, 'tetypha, than toſſing off a tankard of 'hot negus, or being lulled a-ſleep in 'the arms of ſome kind fair, after hav-'ing paſſed an hour or two in the moſt 'delicious dalliance.'

Perceiving me to ſtare at this roman-tic addreſs, he went on: 'Yes, my 'boy; and if you'll take the trouble 'to call at ſix at my chambers, I'll 'introduce you to a ſet of as choice 'bona robas as ever broke the ſeventh 'commandment ſince the deſtruction 'of the temple, or the days of the pro-'phet Nathan. None of your preciſe 'ſqueamiſh b——s, whoſe mouths are 'full of ſcripture, and their hearts of 'unnatural luſts; but girls of ſpirit! 'who profeſs an infinite veneration to 'the expreſſive command, Increaſe, 'and multiply: and by their implicit 'obedience thereto, fully demonſtrate 'he ſatisfaction they conceive in doing 'homage to ſo divine a precept.

He

He then obſerved, that as it was to be the firſt night of my introduction to life, I would do well to call for a crown-bowl of punch and a ſupper to treat the company with on my firſt appearance; as ſuch an action could not fail of having due weight, and might prepoſſeſs me in the favour of individuals, while the nymphs would outvie each other in expreſſions of unlimited fondneſs: a circumſtance moſt devoutly to be wiſhed by every beginner in the myſteries of oblation at the ſhrine of Venus.

This eloquent concluſion put an effectual ſtop to the many agreeable ideas my imagination began to conceive at the commencement of his harangue; and I told him, with a look that ſufficiently expreſſed my chagrin, that I was extremely mortified to find myſelf incapable of ſharing in his pleaſurable amuſements.

Sur-

...ucu, if I ha
'breath upon an e
'phrodite all this t
'it.' I replied, as t
he need be under n
that I was as good a
ſons of Adam; but
ſtand, that ſo far fro
mand of ſo immenſe
crown, I had not ev
of the ſum he mentic
ſhould ſcarce be foun
fields, at a time when
tian world had thoug
the decays of nature by
a good dinner, but rat
half-famiſhed

no inconſiderable figure at our table, particularly on faſt-days, ſuch as that was, and which were always regarded by the matron of the family in the moſt literal and chriſtian ſenſe.

He expreſſed a moſt friendly concern to be thus made acquainted with the low ſtate of my finances; and obſerved, that ways and means might be found to remedy this inconvenience, and oblige my uncle to refund. As this was a circumſtance which had long puzzled me to no purpoſe, I begged him to acquaint me with it, and he ſhould quickly ſee I would not fail to improve the hint to the beſt advantage. On this he took notice, that it was a ſhame a young fellow of my fortune and expectations ſhould be in any want of that neceſſary article caſh, when there were ſo many ways to be furniſhed at an eaſy rate, in ſo populous a city; aſſuring me, that he had helped many a young heir before now to the poſſeſ-

ſion

Tranſported at this agr
mation, I told him, if ſuc
that could be brought to
means, I ſhould look upon
beſt friend I had in the wo
'bear!' ſays he, yes, yes, th
'leaſt room to doubt of its
'you'll follow my directions
'Suppoſe, you go to a wh
'der, or ſhopkeeper, of whi
'great plenty in this city, w
'ing up ten or a dozen pou
'of the moſt ſaleable commo
'credit, (which you can eaſil
'he ſhall

'by which means you can always be 'ſupplied with caſh, and at the ſame 'time oblige your uncle to agree to a 'handſome allowance of pocket-money, 'by way of prevention to ſuch neceſſa-'ry proceedings for the future.

I liked this way of arguing ſo well, that the very ſame day, by the induſtry of my new friend ORaily, for that was his name, I was introduced to a conſiderable dealer in toys; and before we parted, had come to ſo good an underſtanding together, that I received in a watch, rings and other trinkets, to the value of thirty pounds, for which I gave him a draught on my uncle for that ſum, payable three months after date, with a particular one of my own, in caſe of non-acceptance, leaving this honeſt man extremely ſatisfied at the tranſactions of the day.

Upon waiting on us to the door, after ſome little heſitation, he hinted,

that if at any time I ſhould have occaſion to part with thoſe commodities, he could recommend me to a particular friend, who made it his buſineſs to purchaſe ſuch things at ſecond-hand, and would give me more money for them than any body elſe in that way.

I was glad to hear him mention this, and directly told him, that as my pocket at that juncture was at a moſt dangerous ebb, I ſhould be glad to find a purchaſer, who would take ſome of them in exchange directly for ready money. My friend O Raily, at the ſame time, rubbing his hands as in ecſtacy, proteſted, that if he could oblige us in that particular, he would ſet him down in his heart; and if ever he forgot the favour, moſt cordially wiſhed, the devil might ſeize him.

'Nay, gentlemen, quoth the toy-
'man, as to theſe matters, d'ye ſee, 'tis
'no buſineſs of mine in the leaſt, I only
'men-

'mentioned the affair, with a view to 'oblige the young gentleman, in caſe he 'ſhould have a mind to diſpoſe of them 'at any time; and, as I ſaid before, 'purely to recommend my friend to a 'cuſtomer in his way: but if you want 'to ſee the perſon, I can ſend for him 'preſently, you may ſlip over the way 'to the coffee-houſe, and he ſhall call 'upon you in a few minutes.'

Accordingly we went, and ſoon after were waited upon by a very mean-looking man, who, I afterwards found, was no other than his own journeyman. After ſurveying the particulars, he declared they were very good of their kind, that they were; he could ſay nothing to the contrary, not he; but that he could not afford to give any high price for them, as ſo many ſecond-hand commodities were to be purchaſed every day at half price, which with a little vaumping up would ſerve his turn fully as well. But in regard that Mr. Paſte had recom-

mended him, and in hopes of retaining my cuſtom, he would ſo far overſtretch himſelf for this once, as to bid fifteen guineas for them; and certainly, if I conſidered the length of time he might keep them upon his hands, it was a very reaſonable price.

I was wonderfully diſpleaſed at this injurious propoſal; but in the end, rather than ſtand out, and the fellow advancing to twenty pounds, I was prevailed upon to take his money, tho' not without feeling ſome very diſagreeable reflections on my hopeful way of commencing dealer.

But my friend ſoon found means to ſilence all farther cogitations from that quarter, by obſerving that twenty pounds was no contemptible ſum in a young fellow's pocket, and that I might thank God I had found out ſo happy an expedient to ſupply myſelf, without being

being obliged to my raſcally uncle, and then bid me conſider it as a loſs which muſt naturally happen now and then in the courſe of buſineſs.

Elated at this homely conſolation, I was about to retire; but recollecting that I was in gratitude bound to return this obligation in the kindeſt manner, and perceiving by ſome looſe hints, that ſuch a thing would be no ways diſagreeable, I inſiſted on his acceptance of a couple of pieces, as an inſtance of my regard; which, after a great many ſeeming evaſions, he however pocketed, ſwearing moſt cordially, I was a d—n'd clever fellow.

I was wonderfully delighted at this flattering obſervation, and looking upon myſelf in a very fair way of ſoon being a Buck of the firſt order, went home in the moſt rapturous ſtate of exaltation my ſpirits were capable of

exerting, without touching on the verge of lunacy.

The pleaſurable ſituation of my mind added freſh vigour to the circulation of my formerly languiſhing fluids, and the ſudden acquiſition of animal vivacity, occaſioned from ſome wine we had drank over the bargain, diſplayed ſo carnation a livery over my countenance, as was ſoon taken notice of by my penetrating aunt at home, who did not fail to attribute ſo agreeable a change to the enlivening and balſamick qualities of her liquid preparations. But I was far from agreeing with her as to this inſtance of her ſelf-intereſted obſervation; and took notice, that what ſhe was pleaſed to conſign to the ſuperabundant prevalency of her noſtrums, was in reality owing to the more influencing particles of ſome curious boiled chickens, of which I had made a moſt delicious repaſt, at the houſe of a boſom-friend.

I then

I then gave her to underſtand, that I was reſolved to remove myſelf by habeas corpus to ſome other houſe, where I ſhould not eternally be put in mind of Pharaoh's lean kine, or the powdering hoſpital for contaminated whores, by ſuch abſtemious banquets; obſerving that ſeveral of the faculty had given it as their unanimous opinion, that a farther continuation in this water-gruel diet would infallibly bring on a violent flux, which would be productive of a relaxation of the whole nervous ſyſtem, and then farewel to turkies, chines, and plump ſucking pigs, with which I henceforth determined to regale myſelf, in order to make ſome amends for the many faſt-days ſhe had obliged me to keep: in a word, being quite intoxicated with the wine I had drank, and the thought of being maſter of ſo much money, I rattled her off ſo effectually, that ſhe called up the maid to her aſſiſtance, threatened to acquaint my uncle with

CHA

Raily takes me to
Our reception by
manſion.—Are aw
by a horrible noi
verting diſcovery,
ſingular piece of a
our hoſteſs and ar
guards. — Make a
ſtreets.—Exerciſe ou
inſpired ſhoemaker, a
ted to the watch-houſe

that for two whole hours I had not power to withdraw myſelf from the agreeable ſcene; and at laſt came to a reſolution to exchange the whole into crown-pieces, with a view of making the more pompous appearance in my pocket.

When I had put this notable deſign in practice, my next care was to proceed forthwith to the lodging of my friend Raily, whom I found at home anxiouſly waiting my arrival. Upon communicating the diſcourſe I had held with my aunt, he ſwore I was much in the right, expreſſed great ſatisfaction at the ſpirit I had exerted on the occaſion, and obſerved, a few days more in his company would infallibly bruſh off the ſlovenly airs I had imbibed in the country, and diſplay my latent talents to admiration. In the mean time, ſays he, let us make uſe of thoſe we are at preſent bleſſed with, and ſpend the night like gentlemen.

With this view we bent our courſe to a houſe he often frequended; and on our way thither, he let me know, that the place bound for was the beſt adapted for the intercourſe of love, of any in town; as being a houſe of call for the young and gay of both ſexes; that girls of fifteen, and old maids of every denomination, here found a never-failing antidote for vapours and green-ſickneſs; and that, to uſe the language of London, we could be ſupplied from the degree of a milliner at the court-end of the town, to a humble bunter in Moorfields.

I liſtened with ſingular attention to this curious harangue, and upon entering the premiſſes, had reaſon to believe, he had not exaggerated in his deſcription; for the prieſteſs of the manſion, who, in idea, exhibited the appearance of a wool-pack, perceiving a new face, aſked Raily, if I was a young phyſick-broker come up to town to ſtudy the ſecrets

ſecrets of nature? and then addreſſing herſelf to me, told me I had come in the critical minute, for ſhe had at that juncture under her care a ſhe-patient of fifteen, troubled with flatulencies, with a high pulſe, pouting lip, and velvet ſkin, whom I might have an opportunity to bleed in the jocular vein for a ſmall fee; at the ſame time giving me to underſtand, ſhe was full of love, and ready to undergo any operation I ſhould be willing to practiſe on her, and that her price was a guinea without deduction. As ſhe finiſhed theſe words, 'Here, Clariſſa,' ſays ſhe, 'call Miſs Pa-'mela down!' And on a girl's anſwering to that name, 'Come hither, child, 'don't be aſham'd, but ſalute the gentle-'man! Poor thing, how ſhe bluſhes! 'Lord, what a delicious morſel 'twill 'be! I'll warrant her, upon a nearer 'acquaintance, ſhe'll pleaſure you to 'a hair, and wriggle herſelf to your 'liking with the endearing twines of an 'enraptured bride.' But I was by no means

means ſatisfied as to the impartiality of her account, when upon giving me a kiſs, ſuch an infernal ſteam of gin exhaled from her mouth in the embrace, and went clear down my throat, that my ſtomach could not ſtand the unſavoury ſhock, but quickly returned the compliment by diſcharging the whole quantity of ſolids and fluids I had that day ſwallowed; and by a thorough evacuation acted the part of the moſt effectual emetick.

This action produced a very ſenſible alteration of muſcles in the countenance of the old bawd, who could by no means comprehend its meaning, but ſtood ſtaring in the room like a cow at a ſign-poſt; till Raily found means to rouſe her from her trance, by thundering out, 'D—n your blood! you 'old Catamaran, what is the meaning 'of this uſage? Do ye think to palm 'your rag-fair b—t—hes upon us for 'ſound fillies, by the ſtale artifice of a

'Cla-

'Clariſſa, or a Pamela? Or rigging 'them out in the tawdry pomp of a white 'flag and a canopy? But I ſee how it 'is: you begin to deſpiſe your friends! 'ſo take your louſy reckoning, and 'may I be d—n'd, if I ever after ſet 'foot within your houſe again!'

Having ſaid this, he was lugging me along with him with all expedition imaginable, when the old bawd, unwilling to loſe ſo good a cuſtomer, in a very ſubmiſſive manner, implored his excuſe, and begged us to walk up ſtairs, where we ſhould be furniſhed with titts to our liking, if her name was Strumwell. At the ſame time apologizing for the girl's eruction, by obſerving ſhe had only ſwallowed a little garlick and gin that morning for the cure of a cholick ſhe had fallen into, occaſioned through the violence of a late ſalivation. But the matter did not reſt here. She was ſo fearful of having diſobliged my friend Raily, that ſhe called

called for a large bowl of rack punch, the better to ſecure a reconciliation, and inſiſted on treating us both with the ſame in ſuch a torrent of noiſy eloquence, that our reſentment ſubſided, and all thoughts of going away for that night were laid aſide.

This our hoſteſs took ſo kindly, that ſhe jumped about the room with the agility of a rope-dancer; after having in repeated bumpers drank Succeſs to whoredom, Damnation to matrimony, Confuſion to maidenheads, and a wiſh that every whore in the kingdom might ride in her coach and ſix, and that no honeſt woman ſhould dare to ſhow her face, with ſo prevailing an energy, as fully demonſtrated the remarkable deſire ſhe had for the verification of ſo agreeable a change.

When we had thus once more ſettled matters on an amicable footing, we paſſed ſome hours very pleaſantly, till about

about four in the morning we were awakened by ſo hideous an uproar, as if all hell had broke looſe, and was come to carry away our landlady for her many aggravating ſins of permiſſion and commiſſion. Alarmed at ſo unſeaſonable a diſturbance, we jumped out of bed, and ſnatching up a candle, made the beſt of our way to the kitchen; but in deſcending the ſtair-caſe, happening to ſtumble againſt a door on the left hand, it quickly gave way, when to my infinite aſtoniſhment I ſoon perceived my uncle's ſon in a very indecent poſture, beating time to the vibrations of a pair of brawny female b——ks, which were elevated or depreſſed according to the various exhibitions of a blind fiddler in the corner, who was echoing through the room the antient tune of "Merrily danc'd the "quaker's wife, &c." on an old crazy viol.

Con-

Confounded beyond meaſure at ſo unexpected a ſight, more eſpecially as the party concerned had procured a high character by his demureneſs, I was ſome time before I could credit my optics; till Raily obſerved, that what I was ſo ſurprized at, was no ways uncommon, as the buſineſs my pious couſin was engaged in was only a charitable eſſay towards the converſion of a ſinner by the half blood; withal, exhorting him to graft his admonitions in the moſt prevailing manner, for that his patient would not fail to return the compliment, which he might perhaps find the firſt ſearching weather: at which he locked the door on the outſide, and left the affrighted delinquent in a ſtate of univerſal trepidation; while his paramour moſt cordially d——n'd our blood for our unmannerly intruſion.

On entering the kitchen, we found the tumult proceeded from a very furious altercation between our hoſteſs and

and a young officer, who was every now and then ſaluting her with the title of tinker's trull, and ſink of the mob; while ſhe, on the other hand, honoured him with the appellation of louſy puppy, and petty warrant dog. 'We all know, 'continued ſhe, the importance of a 'trifling enſign of foot, whoſe pay, in-'ſtead of affording his bottle and 'w—re, is hardly ſufficient to keep him 'in ruffled ſleeves and ſmall-beer, and 'yet the monkey muſt ſmell p—ſs! 'We have many ſuch cuſtomers as 'you, and be d——n'd to you! And 'what with the untowardneſs of ſome 'b—h—s, who, after three months 'hard keeping, can hardly be brought 'to know their buſineſs as they ought 'to do, and the incroachments of ſuch 'ſcoundrels as you, this laudable and 'praiſe-worthy occupation muſt fall to 'the ground.'

As ſhe ſpoke this, her boſom heaved with over-flowing paſſion, her eyes glared

glared in her head like two balls of fire, and advancing towards her antagoniſt with the look of an infernal demon, ſhe gave him ſo perſuaſive a ſalute in the chops, as quickly produced a very copious diſcharge of the iraſcible particles of this ſon of Mars, who no ſooner perceived his precious blood diſtilling from his creſt-fallen face, than his bluſtering courage forſook him, and he only pronounced in a faultering accent, 'O Madam! this is mighty 'well, d——n my b——d! but all's 'one for that. I ſhall take care to re-'member you, blaſt me!' He was then moving off in no little hurry, but miſſing his ſword, ſoon found to his infinite vexation that it had been ſeized for the reckoning, and was even obliged to trudge home without that neceſſary ornament at his poſteriors, till he ſhould redeem the ſame by a freſh draught on his agent.

By

By this time it was almoſt day; and not chooſing to trifle any longer with our kind partners, we determined to make a ſally into the ſtreets in queſt of adventures, after having been reinforced by three or four choice blades from the ſame quarter, remarkable of late for their ſingular atchievements in demoliſhing ſign-poſts, breaking lamps, and knocking down the watch.

We had not proceeded far upon this expedition, before we met with a certain ſhoemaker, who had taken it into his head to commence preacher, and actually fancied himſelf inſpired. This was an opportunity that was not in our then humour to be paſſed by. The alarm was inſtantly given by Raily, on which half a dozen of us laid hold on this limb of the church, and clapping him into an empty ſugar-barrel, which at that juncture ſtood very opportunely at a grocer's door, we gave him ſo curious a rotation through half the town,

town, that the poor devil was diſabled from mounting a roſtrum for ſome time; and we afterwards heard, that in his next ſermon he entertained his audience with the relation of a very ſtrange and ſurprizing dream, he had experienced during his abode in the machine, little inferior to the viſions of Mirza, but altogether as much upon the wonderful, to the no ſmall edification of the gaping crowd.

Having tranſacted this notable exploit, we fell to work, and in a ſhort time made ſo great an alteration in the face of buſineſs, by tranſmogrifying a tallow-chandler's ſign into a book-binder's, and a cobler's to that of a publican, that in the morning it afforded matter of no ſmall ſurprize, to ſee above a woollen-draper's ſhop theſe words, "Sea-coal, char-coal, live-coal, "ſmall-coal, and ſmall-coal duſt, ſold "here, wholeſale and retail at reaſon-"able rates, by Timothy Smokeface;" while

while a ſilk-mercer's exhibited the appearance of a nightman poleman's.

But we could not continue long in this riotous life undiſcovered: for one night, in conſequence of a violent diſturbance we occaſioned in the ſtreets by attacking a party of watchmen upon the patrole, we were overpowered by numbers and carried before the mayor of the city, who committed three of my companions to durance, as old offenders; and after giving me to underſtand, that ſuch another exploit would oblige him to uſe me in the ſame manner, diſcharged me for that time; but tranſmitted an account of the whole affair to my uncle in the moſt tragick colours.

To add to my infelicity, about this time, ſeveral demands came upon me for debts, contracted in the courſe of my debaucheries, which my uncle abſolutely refuſed to diſcharge; obſerving, that

that my expences already had conſiderably exceeded my annual rent, and he was in no mind to make any freſh diſburſements on that account; at the ſame time reading me a very ſevere lecture on the neceſſity of embracing a more ſober and chriſtian deportment for the future.

He then took notice, that ſince I had, by my folly and extravagance, reduced myſelf to this paſs, I muſt chuſe the alternative, either of going to ſea, where a youth of my abilities could not fail in a few years to arrive at the command of a ſhip in perſon; or otherwiſe run the certain riſk of being thrown into gaol by my creditors, in which caſe he ſhould be in no hurry to relieve me, till I ſhould fairly pay off my debts, and alſo give convincing tokens of a ſincere contrition for my paſt folly.

When he had delivered himſelf in this manner, he let me know, he ſhould expect

expect my final anſwer in two days, and then left me in a more ſerious frame of mind than I had experienced for ſome time.

In this diſtreſs I had recourſe to my friend Raily, communicating my difficulties, and deſiring his advice, which I looked upon as orthodox: but that faithful adherent, hitherto, no ſooner perceived how the land lay, and that he had no farther proſpect of profiting by my intemperance, than he kept aloof, and in a very cold manner adviſed me to embrace my worthy uncle's propoſal of going to ſea at all events, as my creditors muſt be paid, and there was a neceſſity to retrench. When I took notice of this ſudden eſtrangement, he evaded farther expoſtulations on the ſubject, by pretending great loſſes of late in gaming, and deſired me to lend him five guineas; no doubt with a view to prevent the ſame demand upon him,

him, which, by ſeveral broken words, I had already hinted at.

But I was not ſo ſhallow as not to ſee through this artifice; and taking fire at his behaviour, left him in great anger: and next morning, repreſented him in ſuch a light to my uncle, that he complained thereof to the magiſtrates, and he was ordered to leave the city and liberties in twenty-four hours, on pain of having his back adorned with the arms thereof in capitals. For it was now diſcovered, that beſides the money he had received from me at different times, he alſo went ſnacks with the fellow I ſold my goods to, by way of broker; and that I was not the firſt of a hundred he had led into ſuch ſcrapes, by his diabolical machinations.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

I embrace my uncle's propoſal of going to ſea.—Am rigged out accordingly.—Set ſail for Holland.—We are overtaken by a terrible ſtorm, and obliged to put into Yarmouth.—Diverting cataſtrophe of two of the paſſengers.

BEING thus deprived of the company of my companion, whoſe abſence, notwithſtanding his late uſage, I could not help regretting: dunned by my creditors, and avoided by all thoſe who had formerly courted my acquaintance, I became deeply dejected; the town grew irkſome to me, and in a fit of melancholy I waited upon my uncle, and let him know, I was willing to embrace his offer of going to ſea, provided I was to be ſupplied with every thing neceſſary for the voyage.

He was wonderfully delighted at my ready compliance, applauded my reſolution in an extraordinary manner, and, not to let this promiſing humour cool, inſtantly fitted me out with a compleat ſet of thoſe uniforms which conſtitute the dreſs of a gentleman ſailor on ſhore.

My ſhoes were remarkably ſhort in the inſtep, ſo as to diſplay to the beſt advantage, a ſet of elegant ſilver buckles of the firſt magnitude: and my fine holland trouſers of ſix yards circumference, by the neatneſs of their plait-work behind, did no little credit to the operator. My hat was obſerved to be always braced up ſharp upon a wind; while the waving of my fine India handkerchief, repreſented the ſhiverings of a head-ſail in the ſtays. And ſo aſſiduous was I in my new calling, that in a few days I could talk of nothing elſe, but bunt-lines, braces, leetch-lines, and clew-garnets, with a whole train of navigable mate-

materials, which I had induſtriouſly collected from the authentick reports of ſeamen long-uſed to the ſervice.

Being thus compleatly equipped in every point, I waited as impatiently for the hour of embarkation, as the enraptured bridegroom for the departure of thoſe who by an obſequious intruſion protract the happy minute which is to give him the full enjoyment of the yet untaſted beauties of his panting bride; and by that time the ſignal for ſailing was given, I had advanced ſo far in the principles of my profeſſion, as to drink profuſely, ſmoak and chew tobacco, and even pronounce the emphatical expreſſion of d——n my b——d, with a tolerable accent.

Our ſhip was bound to Holland with a loading of tobacco, where delivering her cargo, ſhe was to proceed forthwith in ballaſt to Virginia. This trip was the rather fixed upon by my

element without dan
And if a head ſea
chance to tip me qui
miſes, he could then
enjoyment of my fort

Two things he ſtrong
to the obſervance of the
to bring me up in the f
and a good rope's end;
ſo prejudicial, he ſaid, t
as infidelity and good

For the firſt two da
the inconveniences that
landmen on ſo unſtable
which was conſiderably in
thundering gale [illegible]

of ſafety, the uſual ſickneſs which commonly attends thoſe who are not accuſtomed to the ſea, obliged me and a noted ſmuggler to ſlink off the deck, and betake ourſelves to blanket bay, in order to obtain, if poſſible, a more competent ſhare of eaſe than was likely to be enjoyed above board. Here as we lay, comparing the ſimilitude of a ſmuggling and a ſea-faring life; the one as being exalted or debaſed at each turn of fortune, the other at every ſhift of wind, and copiouſly diſcharging our ſtomachs of that malignant virus which occaſioned our preſent uneaſineſs, our ears were ſaluted with an exclamation the more intimidating as being accompanied with a moſt mournful and dolorous concluſion. This was no other than the man at the lead, who every now and then ſung out in dying ſtrains, and in abundance of ſemiquavers theſe words. 'A—a and a—'a—qua—a—arter ten,' as intimat-

...countable a pl
think no leſs than
taſtrophe would be
had ſcarce time to
conjecture, when th
ſmuggler's hammoc
ſioned by the violer
fetch, ſucceeded by
he was quickly ſhi
middle of the adjace
received ſuch damage
that his ſpirits forſook
upon his knees, he r
'ſpare me! Lord ſpare
'loving kindneſs exten
'ſinner! and may I be
'if I ever commit fo
'with Beſs Mettle befor

'ſwear my conſcience in the courſe of a 'future entry: Amen.'

This extraordinary petition, accompanied with ſo ſingular terms of future amendment, wrought ſo powerfully on my riſibility, that, notwithſtanding the extreme ſickneſs I then laboured under, I burſt inſtantaneouſly into a moſt ungovernable fit of laughter, which occaſioned ſo violent an exploſion of the noxious matter locked up in my bowels, attended with the moſt excruciating twitches in the lower belly, that in a manner I lay buried in it, roaring all the time like an ox in the ſlaughter.

For three long hours we continued in this perplexing ſituation, till the wind ſhifting about, in a ſhort time we made the piers of Yarmouth, and before night were ſo far land-locked, as to bid defiance to a north-weſter, which then began again to ſtorm with all the rage of an incenſed element. At this

- - - about to
and fair weather:
grown myſelf on t
ſhew I was not
member of the ſoci
lity I mounted the
vane at the flag-ſtaf
deſcent to the crew
dollar with an air tha
markable conviction.
portunity might be l
the preſent jollity an
a ſubſcription was inſt
for the more convenien
ſums forfeited by all
never ſeen the tributa
and an unfortunate tay
ſubſcribe to this amicabl
had his

terrorem of all whom it might concern; which operation had a quite different effect on this brother of the thimble, than is conſiſtent with the approved notions of immerſions in general, for as cold baths are commonly uſed by way of aſtringents, this on the contrary was obſerved to perform the part of the moſt ſoluble laxative medicine: for it was obvious to every one, by the perfume that ſaluted their olfactory nerves on his aſcent, that there had been a copious diſcharge, and that ſuch kind of balſamicks, were to be found elſewhere than in apothecaries ſhops.

CHAP. X.

We are viſited by a preſſing tender.—The lieutenant of the gang points me out for a king's man.—I endeavour to procure a repeal with money, but am fruſtrated in my purpoſe by bad policy in this particular.—He is prevailed upon to become my banker, and is characteriſed by a quarter gunner.—We arrive on board the Æ———a, and are entertained by a ſingular adventure.

BUT we did not long enjoy this ſerenity, and had ſoon reaſon to alter our jovial mood, to that of a more ſerious, when we were given to underſtand by ſome fiſhermen along-ſide, that they perceived a ſail in the offing; which by her broad pendant could be no other than a ſhip of war, in which caſe, ſome of us would bid fair to dance a jig

a jig to the muſick of a boatſwain's whiſtle and ratan before night.

Of this we were in a ſhort time ruefully convinced, when a fifty-gun ſhip actually brought too in the bay, and ſent her long boat out compleatly manned, and in full ſtretch for the harbour. On their approaching our ſhip, I was about to retire between decks, in order to avoid any expoſtulations with ſuch a group of infernal objects as then preſented themſelves to my view, armed with piſtols, cutlaſſes, and muſquetoons; but was told by the captain, that as I had embarked in the ſame bottom, I muſt ſtand an equal chance with the reſt of the crew, at the ſame time ordering me to ſtep into the waiſt, and preſent the red ropes to the lieutenant, who mounted the ſide with the pride of a city mayor on a proceſſion. He had no ſooner got upon deck, than he addreſſed the ſkipper, and demanded an account of his cargo,

ton-

tonnage, and number of hands; and obſerving, that his Majeſty had occaſion for a large quantity of ſeamen, deſired him to make no concealments, for if you do, ſays he, we ſhall bring you to the gang-way, d——n me.

The captain taking no notice of this unmannerly ſalute, begged him to ſtep into the cabin and drink a glaſs of wine, when and where he ſhould be fully informed of each particular. He was juſt preparing to put this advice in practice, which had conſiderably ſoftened his features, when he ſpyed me, ſtrutting the deck in my holland trouſers, and a ſcarlet veſt I had that day put on, in order to make the better appearance on ſhore. At this, he ſtarted back in no little ſurpriſe, and eyeing me attentively for ſome time; exclaimed, 'Oh, 'd—n my b——d! who have we got 'here? one of your Italian ſingers 'I warrant you.' Then calling up the coxſwain, deſired him to overhawl that there

there figure, and if ſo be as how he found me to be no mophrodite, to hand me into the barge, for that I would do purely to fill up the net-work in cloſe quarters.

Thunderſtruck at this inſinuation, and more eſpecially when I perceived the coxſwain going to put his orders into practice, I lugged out my purſe, and ſtepping up to the lieutenant, told him I was no ſeaman, as by my dreſs he might reaſonably imagine, but a gentleman's ſon ſent to ſea by my uncle for a ſacrifice; then clapping the money into his hand, begged him to excuſe my ſervice at that juncture, but rather to put me aſhore directly that I might make the beſt of my way home again, the better to diſappoint my worthy guardian in his villanous intention.

Having ſaid this, I was in full hopes to ſucceed in my requeſt, more eſpecially as he took my purſe, which I preſented him with a low bow, and many

during his inſpectio

At laſt, ſhaking h
temptuous ſmile, h
'Why now, this is
'd——n my blood!
'gentlemen, the affa
'dog. With theſe fe
'do ye ſee, he has t
'attempt my honour
'attachment to my g
'uh, this will never d
'repeating the ſtrike o
'ſurveying the guineas
'attention: d——n m
'will never do, you hav
'ſoundings helliſhly. I
'ſcoundrels might &c

'ridge, whose honour, d——n me, 'is sufficiently eſtabliſhed by his per-'ſonal proweſs in the laſt war, d——n 'my blood.'

He then with an air of contempt threw me the purſe, which he obſerved I might have occaſion for one day or other, and adviſed me as a friend, to lodge it in the hands of ſome man of honour on board; where it would be much ſafer than with a perſon in my ſtation, from whom ſome dextrous hand would certainly ſteal it before I could be three days in the ſhip: and comforting me with the proſpect of perhaps being advanced to a yeoman of the dog's nippers, a birth, he obſerved, was charmingly calculated for the meridian of my lubberly complexion.

I expreſſed great ſorrow at having thus unwittingly given him ſuch cauſe of offence; declared my ignorance of any gentleman on board who would be

At this he ſcratc
like Beachy head
ſerved there were m
on board; but as to
ſays he, d——n
'What do you ſay
'addreſſing the coxſ
'the young fellow's
'queſtion?'

On this, Jack obſer
a pity to looſe ſuch a
it in a ſcoundrel's han
might beat the ſeas to
before I could clear ha
and took notice, that if
only be ſo lucky as to p
honour the

took the hint; and after a deal of intreaty he agreed to keep it for me himſelf, telling me, we were like to have a glorious war, during which if I behaved myſelf like an officer, I ſhould be talked of.

While the lieutenant was below drinking a farewel glaſs with my quondam captain, and I was buſy in getting my cheſt and bedding into the barge, a ſly looking fellow who was one of the quarter gunners, took that opportunity to aſk me how my guineas ſtood affected at preſent, and how I durſt preſume to affront the lieutenant by publickly offering him a paultry bribe.

I told him I had no intention to affront any man aboard; that what I did was with a view to effect my own diſcharge, and wondered what could put him into ſo violent a paſſion.

O ho,

'... ...ourneymen.
'have known him be
'into the biggeſt ag
'and for what? why
'little gold duſt bore u
'of his day-lights in
'that he could not dece
'windward of it, wishe
'ſame honour of his o
'rope. Had you bore u
'him at once, and tipt
'without ſo much jaw,
'if he had not pocketed
'and immediately ſent yo
'land lubber. Whereas
'you aſk for your money
'belay you to the maſt, a
'with a round dozen for
'I ſee [illegible]

'for picking a poor fellow's pocket 'genteely, ſuch ſcoundrels as he will 'live, while honeſter men may go to 'hell or ſtarve.'

'Why do you hear me now? he has 'cleared upwards of five hundred pounds 'within theſe few months in the ſame raſ-'cally manner; while here am I, d—n 'my limbs, who have ſerved his Ma-'jeſty's honour many a year, as you 'may ſee, only a louſy midſhipman at 'laſt. But on board our bumboat, he 'is king, prieſt, and prophet; and has 'more to ſay than the captain.'

I was wonderfully taken with this fellow's ſpirit, and invited him to drink a glaſs of rum, of which I told him I had plenty in my cheſt at his ſervice: but he was prevented from accepting my agreeable offer, by the arrival of the lieutenant, attended by five more preſſed men, of which the aforementioned taylor made one of the number, and had

clapt thereon, and n
to the cook's uſe for

As he ſpoke this
and I could perceive t
approached the ſhip,
were the countenance
ſufferers, moſt of wh
ſuch diſmal notions o
that they actually fan
going to hell before the

But we no ſooner c
and the poor taylor he
and ſwearing of the bo
and perceived the numb
buſy in weighing the a
great gun

ſoul, roared out theſe words in the northern dialect, wringing his hands all the time in the moſt expreſſive ſorrow: 'cares my fell, for this day, cares my 'fell, for ever! Cauld's the cry will be 'on the ſtraps of Muſleburgh, the night. 'Cauld's the cry for poor Johny Bau-'drons!' He then threw himſelf at the captain's feet, and begged for the paſſion of Chriſt to be put aſhore; at the ſame time pulling out a paper, which he ſaid was a true copy of his indentures, wherein his honour would find, he had ſerved three years apprenticeſhip to Dugal Macpherſon of Clackmanan Pu, the taylor; and had never been a ſailor in all his born days. But he might have ſaved himſelf this trouble, for the captain underſtood no more of his lingo then he did of Hebrew: and aſked the lieutenant what the ſcoundrel meant by holding out that there damned ſcroll.

On this, Cartridge recollecting that our ſhip had been bound to Virginia,

or at least his order fo
then turning to the
cheer up, for that he
bilbo this bout: 'Yo
'fays he, 'the ſea and th
'no man.'

But the poor fellow
nettled at being looked u
and, in the vindication o
blabbed out ſomething,
reflect on the command
dring out, 'D——n you
'ye chatter?' ordered the
belay him to the jears, a
round dozen for his jaw w
ingly he was ſtript to th
inſtant, and underwent ſo

This puniſhment, as ſudden as it was ſevere, wrought ſuch an effect on the poor taylor's intellects, that he was no ſooner diſengaged from the whipping-poſt, than flying up to the captain with the rage of a bedlamite, he pulled out a halfpenny, and threw it in his face, with theſe words: 'I citation you, you 'captain Lucifer, by the wetchcraft of 'this bawbie, till appear within twa ours 'afore your makker, for gyden ony 'oneſt man's chield, in ſikinna bleedy 'gate.' Having ſaid this, he ran to one of the port holes, and threw himſelf overboard in the greateſt diſtraction.

It happened very lucky for him at this juncture, that a boat was juſt underneath, in which was one of the hands employed in bailing out the water, who finding himſelf boarded in ſo unexpected a manner, exclaimed with great paſſion. 'What ho! are you coming there? 'here's Scarborough warning, d—n 'me, with the devil and all! hand over 'the

'the runner and tackle there; I'll be 'curſt if a ſea monſter han't clapt me 'on board this minute, with claws like 'hands and feet, like another man.' He then lugged out his claſp knife, and putting himſelf in a poſture of defence, was preparing to make ſome very curious diſſections on the body of the unfortunate Baudrons, had he not been prevented by an order to fling him to a rope, and let him be hoiſted upon deck directly.

Undoubtedly the man in the boat had conſiderably broke his fall, for his right ſhoulder was only diſlocated, and ſome trifling contuſions appeared upon his head: which however augmented his pain ſo much in the dreſſing, that he bellowed like an aſs in a high wind, ſo that he was obliged to be ſent down to the cock-pit, to clear the deck of his noiſe; but not before the captain had ordered his back to be anointed with ſome pickle, by way of preventing a mor-

a mortification, which increaſed his agony ſo intolerably, that he exhibited the various contorſions and wreathings of a rattle ſnake with ſurprizing velocity, to the no ſmall edification of the commander, who ſwore he ſhould dance to the ſecond part of the ſame tune, for a month of Sundays; ſtill repeating the word citation, which he could neither underſtand, nor digeſt. 'I do ſuppoſe, as how,' ſays he 'the dog means to 'bring me to Doctors Commons: I was 'once ſerved ſuch a louſy trick before at 'that place, to the tune of ſome hun-'dreds; but I'll take care of ſome body, 'blaſt me. The dog ſhall ſmell oackum 'once a day, and feel it too, elſe my 'name an't Buffalo, that's all: I ſhoudn't 'have thought of citation, d—— me, 'and from a taylor too!'

While I was obſerving theſe tranſactions with great attention, and forming ſome reflections in regard to my own ſituation, a boatſwain's driver compli-

'your thieving irons u
'help to rouſe in? w
'arn't as yet in your
found this kind of
tremely prevailing, tha
his orders a ſingle m
work directly.

CHAP. XI.

I am accuſed of mutiny by the boat-ſwain.—Am chained down to the deck all night, and tried by a court of officers next morning.—Procure my releaſe at the inſtance of the chaplain, who is abuſed on my account.—Improve a hint that is given me, and effect my diſcharge by the mediation of the ſurgeon's mate.

ONE night as we lay at anchor in the Downs, I came upon deck, in order to enjoy a few minutes in contemplation; a circumſtance I had ſeldom any opportunity to indulge in, on account of the more than infernal noiſe and buſtle that conſtantly ſurrounded me on every quarter: but at this juncture, being a fine calm, and about the hour of twelve, all things were more than ordinary ſilent; and unleſs the gentle murmuring of the ſea againſt

the ſhip's ſide, and the ſnoaring of a few hands upon the watch, moſt of whom were aſleep, I had nothing to diſturb my meditation.

As the fore-caſtle was the fitteſt place for this purpoſe, I took up my ſtation there; and had wandered over in my mind from one ſubject to another, till at laſt I fell upon a paſſage in Hamlet, which ſeemed ſo applicable to my preſent ſituation, that being wrapt in thought, and ignorant of the conſequences, I bawled aloud theſe lines in an exalted voice, which I accompanied with all the attitudes of a tragedy hero.

'Tis now the very witching time of night,
When church-yards yawn, and hell itſelf breathes out
Contagion to the world — Now could I drink hot blood,
And do ſuch bitter buſineſs, as the day
Would quake to look on. — Soft —

The boatſwain who was then walking the main deck, and had liſtened with ſingu-

ſingular attention to my whole behaviour, no ſooner heard theſe terrible words, and perceived the menacing poſture I had aſſumed, than he very ſagaciouſly concluded that ſome conſpiracy was on the carpet. Full of this thought he drew near, ſoftly on his tiptoes, and ſoon heard me repeating over the ſame lines again with vaſt energy, which indeed had taken my fancy very much, as the ſtillneſs of the night, and the twinkling of ſome lights from the ſhore, ſerved greatly to augment the ſolemnity of the ſcene. Convinced beyond a doubt that there was certainly a deſign a broaching, he jumpt up with ſurpriſing agility upon the forecaſtle, and ſeizing me by the gullet, put a very diſagreeable ſtop to another ſpeech I had juſt begun, by crying out, 'O ho, 'you cou'd, you dog, ſend us all to 'hell in an inſtant, could you? but I'll 'take care of one, howſomdever, d—n 'my whiſtle. Yo ho, abaft there, call 'all hands directly, here's precious do-

powder room, or I'
'ſhan't all of us be
'pump thunder, in a

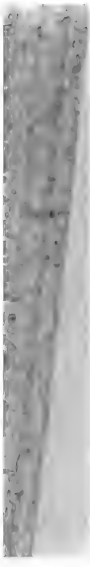
At this exclamation
crouded forward in th
and being told by th
there was certainly a d
run the ſhip on ſhore,
catched one of the ri
going to ſet fire to the
alarmed the officers an
inſtant, and dragging m
me down to one of th
farther examination.

As I lay in this condit
opportunity to aſk the

'ſpectable officer, do ye ſee, with a deſign
'to blow us all to atoms, and are to be
'tried by a court-martial for mutiny as
'ſoon as day. D——n me, you have
'done for yourſelf now to all intents and
'purpoſes, and will be tricked up to the
'yard-arm without bail or mainpriſe;
'that's all — that's all.'

In the morning, the captain, attended by all his officers on board, formed a circle on the quarter deck; and having commanded me to be brought aft, ordered the boatſwain to relate what he had to ſay againſt me. On which my accuſer, after taking a quid of tobacco out of his pouch, and filling his mouth with it, began thus.

'May it pleaſe your worſhipful ho-
'nour, it was my watch laſt night at
'twelve: I was walking the main deck
'very ſoberly, when I perceived this
'here gallows-looking dog chattering
'to ſomebody at a great rate, and be-



' I heard this Scotchn
" there! now or ne
" drink their blood.
" we'll do ſuch a pie
" daylight ſhall tren
' had a deal of mor
' church-yards, and
' On this, knowing
' of preſſed men on
' popt into my brains
' how they had a deſig
' moorings; and as t
' erly, let her drive aſh
' ing ought to any bod
' their eſcape, at the ex
' a ſhip as ever ſpread
' thinks I my boys, I
' let Reeftackle alone

'alarms the whole watch upon the in-
'ſtant; but it was ſo helliſh dark, the
'rogues, I do ſuppoſe, took that oppor-
'tunity to ſculk down the after-hatch-
'way, and left this here villain to pay
'the reckoning.

The captain turned pale as death at theſe words, and in a faultring accent addreſſed the company thus: 'Why, 'gentlemen, do but obſerve, here was 'evidently a deſign on foot to butcher 'us all, every man and mother's ſon 'of us, by G—d! Theſe Scotch ſons 'of b—t—es were always a mutinous 'pack from the beginning of the world, 'and their d—n'd rebellions lately, ſhew 'plainly what kidney they are of:' then turning to me; 'You hell-fired dog you,' ſays he, 'what have you to ſay, why 'we ſhoudn't tuck you up to the yard-'arm without judge, jury, or benefit 'of clergy?' The lieutenant then adviſed me to turn king's evidence, and impeach my companions, as the only

-guilty of a tumu
'do impeach the
'd—me, blow
'honour. I knew
'ſome of theſe oc
'tune: I ſhall ſc
'to the Lords of
'ſerviceable perſon
'mand of a ſhip
'the devil call all
'woul.'

The captain's cle
to read out the ſum
depoſition, on whicl
lows: 'You, Hamilto
'man, are brought b
'able court, on the a

'contained, aided and aſſiſted thereto,
'by certain land-lubbers unknown:
'what have you to ſay why judgment
'ſhould not be pronounced againſt
'you?'

'May it pleaſe your honour,' ſays I, turning to the captain, 'and theſe gallant 'officers in council aſſembled, I can 'by no means comprehend the reaſon of 'all this commotion: all that I can 'ſay of the matter is this, that I came 'upon deck laſt night about twelve; 'and was indulging ſome minutes very 'agreeably in contemplation, when I 'was rudely interrupted by the evidence, 'who uſed me moſt barbarouſly, only 'for pronouncing in an innocent and 'thoughtleſs manner, a few words 'I had recollected from the cele-'brated play of Hamlet, written by 'our famous poet Shakeſpear, as being 'in my happier days much delighted 'with tragedy:' 'Yes, d—me,' ſays the boatſwain, 'ſo it appears you were; and

'we

'we were like to have had a pretty tragi
'cal piece of work of it alſo, hadn't I
'been too many for you.'

I was then ordered to tell in open court what words I had ſaid, and to whom I addreſſed them: on which I repeated the foregoing lines verbatim, and told them I was not ſpeaking to any body, but only amuſing myſelf. 'Not 'ſpeaking to any body!' ſays the cap-'tain, 'why then it muſt be to the devil! 'D—— me, I recollect to have heard 'once, when I was but a youngſter, 'that one of his Majeſty's ſhips 'was tranſported ſome hundreds of 'leagues by ſuch another nobody as 'this ſcoundrel was conſulting with, 'and all in the compaſs of one night, 'and nobody on board knew how, or 'which way, till they fairly found them-'ſelves in Plymouth Sound, for which the 'ſhip was condemned to be burnt down 'to the waters edge for a wizard. But 'who is this Hambleton and this Jack 'Spear

'Spear you chatter ſo much about,
'where be they? produce them, you
'eternal dog directly, or by the living
'God I'll divide thee in the twiſt.'

It was in vain to tell him, that Shakeſpear was a poet and wrote the play I mentioned, and that Hamlet was the the principal character in the drama: he inſiſted it was all a d——d lie, with an obſtinacy peculiar to himſelf; roaring out all the time, that the two ſcoundrels ſhould be brought to the gangway, whom he ſwore muſt certainly be ſome of the chief conſpirators. 'D—me,' ſays he, 'I ought to underſtand ſome-
'thing of tragedy too, I have been at
'ſome pretty tragical work in my time,
'by G—d: when no longer ago than
'in the laſt war, at the bold action in
'the Mediterranean, under the com-
'mand of Admiral ——— I, had three
'gold laced hats carried away by the
'enemies fire, my weather-leg ſhot
'through in three places by their ſmall
'arms,

' bill ever ſince :
' ing ſons of b—
' man out of his
' impudent jaw o
' tainer.'

I was now oblig
ſubmit to the men
which informed me
yours to expect, ſinc
clare my confederates
they were about to ſe
irons to be dealt with a
when a boat came alo
ſhore, in which was
the ſhip, who ſeeing all
ſolemnity, requeſted to
ſon; and being

that there was no treaſon or mutiny in the caſe, by producing the book from which the very lines had been repeated.

But the captain, who was extreamly conceited, and thought his underſtanding affronted by this inſinuation, would hear him no farther on that ſubject; but bid him be gone off the deck to his cabin, and fumble over his old ſtale ſermons, and not buſy himſelf about what was entirely out of his latitude. This was a ſufficient encouragement to the boatſwain, who, enraged to find the honour of the day going thus to be ſnatched out of his hands, came up cloſe to his ear, and ſeizing him by the foretop, cried out, 'I'll tell you what 'Mr. Domine, you nor all the devils 'in hell ſhall ever perſuade me but 'there was mutiny in the caſe, ay, 'and d——'d mutiny too. What! I 'ſuppoſe you are ſome popiſh jeſuit in 'diſguiſe, and have a fellow-feeling 'with dogs of the ſame kidney: but

'had

' veſſel. D—me, I'
' ſhip of you, I wo

He then lugged
violently by the he
made him reel abou
top; and would ha
ſame game much lon
chief mate whiſpered
it was carrying thin
thereupon ordered hi
at the ſame time adviſ
not to trouble himſel
about matters which
him: 'For you ſee,'
'ſtand no more chanc
'cat in hell without c
chaplain, highly reſenti

boatſwain publickly aſked his pardon for the late affront, and the poor fellow (meaning me) ſhould be diſcharged: which the captain at laſt thought fit to grant, after deſiring me to hold no more jaw-work with the devil on board his ſhip, on pain of being keel-hawled; and the boatſwain, in high dudgeon, told me I ſhould have reaſon to curſe father and mother, and turn Turk, for this day's proceeding.

Indeed I had ſoon cauſe to believe he would not be worſe than his word; for the very next morning, under pretence of having the main-top-gallant-ſhrouds tarr'd, although it was then my watch below, he called me up, and telling me that to ſpill the leaſt drop in the operation, I had better be d—n'd, ſent me aloft to perform that diſagreeable job, while he conducted me himſelf as far as the foot-hook-ſhrouds, where making ſome ſtand, on account of the falling back of the rigging,

ing, he belaboured me ſo heartily with a rope's end, that in the agony of pain, I was conſtrained to heave the whole bucket of tar full in his face, which put him in ſuch a trim, that he roared in concert, and ſwore moſt confoundedly that a Scotchman was certainly the devil.

Another time, for ſome trifling fault, he laſhed me up to the weather-ſhrouds, where I ſtood eight long hours with my face expoſed to the attacks of a north-eaſt-wind in the middle of March; and in a word, he found ſo many methods to verify his promiſe, that my life was intolerable, and I began to have ſome thoughts of watching for an opportunity of jumping overboard and dragging my perſecutor along with me.

In this diſtreſs I was given to underſtand one day by a young fellow, a retainer to the cock-pit, that if I

even

ever had a mind to effect my diſcharge, I would do well to make application to the ſurgeon's mate, who, for a trifling conſideration, would enter me in the ſick liſt that was to go aſhore the next Monday; adding, that if I was once a-ground, it was my own fault if ever I came there again; for he had overheard the boatſwain threaten to beat me to ſtockfiſh. I thanked him very heartily for this ſalutary advice, and deſired him to drink a glaſs of rum; but in looking for the ſmall cheſt it was in, I found the whole, caſe and all, had been pillaged ſince my arrival on board, of which ſome broken pieces of the lid, whereon my name was engraved, convinced me to a demonſtration. However, I was very glad to find they had not meddled with my cheſt wherein was my clothes and gold watch; and I reſolved to make no mention of theſe, leſt Mr. Cartridge ſhould be for keeping them for me alſo.

In

In conſequence of this hint, I took occaſion to ſlip down next morning into the ſurgery under pretence of getting a piece of ſalve for a ſore finger; and while the mate was very complaiſantly cutting it for me, as not doubting the truth of my errand, I teſtified my ſurpriſe that a young gentleman in his ſtation ſhould wear check ſhirts, while little petty warrants were flaunting it about in their ruffles, and begged him to accept of a couple of mine which had never been worn; at the ſame time deſiring his advice how to extricate myſelf out of the troubleſome dilemma I was in. I did not ſtay for his advice after having ſaid this, but I ran to my cheſt and brought out three Holland ſhirts, with as many cambrick neck-cloths, which I put into his hands with great ſubmiſſion, and apologizing very much for my freedom.

I ſoon found I had taken no improper method to ſucceed. He received my

my preſent with great pleaſure, and with a ſmiling countenance, addreſſed me as follows: 'Come, my lad, I 'find you are a gentleman, and ſome-'thing muſt be done for you ſpeedily. 'Let me ſee — Ay, you muſt have the 'itch, the better to deceive their op-'ticks; and if that won't do, we muſt 'clap you into a raging fever for ſome 'time. Do you take me?'

I was very much diſguſted at theſe violent methods, and hinted my unwillingneſs to have any thing to do with fevers, as having ſome months before been almoſt carried off with one. At which he laughed heartily, and gave me to underſtand, that what he meant was only an artificial one, brought on by clapping a little clove of garlick into my fundament, which would raiſe my blood into ſuch a ſtate of fermentation, as might deceive the whole faculty; but, ſays he, I believe we ſhall have no occaſion for this experiment.

He

He then made me throw off my jacket, and bare my arms to the full length, on which he chafed my ſkin in ſuch manner that it looked like a piece of raw-beef. When he had rubbed me ſufficiently as he thought, he put on a layer of gunpowder, which he infuſed into my ſkin by friction, and after ſerving my breaſt and thighs in the ſame way, obſerved I had got a moſt damnable itch and ſcurvy, and there was a neceſſity to ſend me aſhore ſpeedily, in order to keep the ſhip's crew from being tainted with the infectious diſtemper.

I now thought proper to mention my money in the lieutenant's hands; but he adviſed me to touch upon that ſtring as little as poſſible: for if he found I wanted to withdraw it, he would infallibly ſtop my going on ſhore, in order to make my life a burden; whereas now, ſays he, if you are quite ſilent, he'll be glad of your going,

my preſent with great pleaſure, and with a ſmiling countenance, addreſſed me as follows: 'Come, my lad, I 'find you are a gentleman, and ſome-'thing muſt be done for you ſpeedily. 'Let me ſee — Ay, you muſt have the 'itch, the better to deceive their op-'ticks; and if that won't do, we muſt 'clap you into a raging fever for ſome 'time. Do you take me?'

I was very much diſguſted at theſe violent methods, and hinted my unwillingneſs to have any thing to do with fevers, as having ſome months before been almoſt carried off with one. At which he laughed heartily, and gave me to underſtand, that what he meant was only an artificial one, brought on by clapping a little clove of garlick into my fundament, which would raiſe my blood into ſuch a ſtate of fermentation, as might deceive the whole faculty; but, ſays he, I believe we ſhall have no occaſion for this experiment.

He

This was touching upon the right ſtring. He made me drink a ſhare of a bowl of punch with him before my departure; and at going away, he accompanied me to the gang-way himſelf, and prevented me from receiving ſome very convincing tokens of affection, which my good friend the boatſwain was preparing to compliment me with on this occaſion.

As I had juſt got into the boat, the poor taylor, whom I have heretofore mentioned by the name of Baudrons, ſeeing me in this happy ſituation, approached the gunwale, and after ſhedding abundance of tears, addreſſed me thus: 'My dear frien, ye are nu 'gangin till a quintra, like the laund 'of Canaan, fu o milk and hinny, an 'faar peer Johny Baudrons manna ne 'mare bouden himſel to pluck the green 'gowin — fan ye ſal get a fittininment 'upo the Laund o'Cakes, dinna forget 'to gee my kine ſervice to ilka body 'faas

'faas names are pitten doon upo this 'bitty o' paper, an lat them ken, at 'they wid need to hae unko braw ein, 'an ever they ſee me ony mare, for 'lang afore they read the guts o' this 'letter, peer Johny Baudrons will be 'a caller meel's meltit for kitty weeaks 'and ſea meaws.'.

Having ſaid this, his boſom heaved with tumultuous paſſions, his eyes were drowned in floods of briny tears, and I myſelf was ſo affected at this mournful and melancholy ſcene, that, notwithſtanding my preſent exceſs of ſpirits, I could not help expreſſing my concern for him in a ſympathetick ſhower, ſo much had the poor fellow's diſmal greeting affected my paſſions; and on our way to ſhore, I ſo earneſtly recommended him to the ſurgeon's mate, that he promiſed to ſtand his friend the firſt opportunity.

CHAP. XII.

I land at Deal.—Put up at a public houſe.—Qualifications of my landlady.—Commence an intrigue with Miſs Betſy her daughter, which is carried on to the laſt criſis.

WHEN I had once more ſet my feet upon dry land, I looked back to the Downs with infinite joy, to think I had ſo happily got rid of my late infernal quarters, and gazing on the ſhip, which was then mounted on the top of a riſing ſurge, 'Farewel,' ſays I, 'thou inhoſpitable dwelling! 'farewel thou boiſterous element! and 'fare thee well, thou ſtill more boiſ-'terous captain Buffalo! And oh! 'forbear to exerciſe farther thy ty-'rannick ſway on the body of the poor 'unfortunate Baudrons, leſt you force 'that unhappy wretch to ſeek refuge 'from thy barbarity in the briny deep! 'And for myſelf, may I henceforth 'never

never behold thy deteſted face again, or hear mention of thee more, unleſs perchance, I ſhould encounter thee in thy progreſs to Execution Dock, or peruſe thy deteſted name in ſome friendly paragraph of news, as a victim to the revenge of thy offended country, for having diſgraced the glory of the Britiſh flag, by thy barbarity and cowardice, for cruelty and fear, are thy diſtinguiſhing characteriſticks; which with groſs ignorance and moſt conſummate pride, conſtitute thee at once a prodigy of wickedneſs and folly.'

Having given vent to the emotions f my heart on this occaſion, I turned ay face from the ſhore, and entered he town of Deal, where I reſolved to eſt a few days before I ſet out for ondon: with this view, I took a lodgng at a publick houſe, and for the firſt ime ſince I left Scotland, began to enoy the ſweets of life.

than one, ſhe had ve
verted the back par
a pawnbroker's ſhop,
ter Miſs Betſy, ma
ſucceſs among the ſai
took care that the ſt
thoſe occaſions, ſhoul
native quarters, by ple
her cuſtomers with ſt
the nature of a public

I had not been ma
houſe, before I found
ſuch a convenience in
like this, for as moſt o
ney had been [illegible]

It was not long before I obſerved there was another branch ſtill, in which they carried on a conſiderable traffick, and it was this, that neither mother or daughter would ſcruple to let out their perſons to any obliging cuſtomer, for a a conſideration: this I was given to underſtand one day by my landlady herſelf; who, after praiſing the good qualities of her daughter, proceeded thus:

'But take care, you young leering 'rogue, you don't fall foul of the poor 'chicken, for ſhould you, mercy on 'me! I know not what would be the 'conſequence, for women, you know 'are frail when objects are tempting, 'and then — but I'll ſay no more, tho' 'one thing I muſt whiſper in your ear, 'that ſhe vows, ſo ſhe does, that if ſhe 'can't have a ſailor, ſhe never will 'marry another man in her life: God's 'bleſſing attend the ſailors wherever 'they go! they are the ſtrength of the 'nation in peace, and its defence in

venture to oblige
'leaſt fear or riſqu
'huſband was a ſail
'ſailor, and it is by
'bleſs their honeſt
'Coaxum, with all h

Thus ſhe ran on fo
an hour, in repeati
virtues of ſailors; and
tinued much longer
from a ſuppoſition tha
number, had not Miſs
her by ſtepping into the
obligingly inviting me
ner; and who, during t

I now began to fancy that all this kind uſage could proceed from nothing but their opinion of my being a gentleman, and with this thought, I took occaſion for the firſt time, to pull out my watch in order to convince them to a reality, that they were not wrong in their conjectures: as this was a moveable neither of them had yet ſeen, I could perceive their to opticks enlarge themſelves in a particular manner at its production, and at laſt fairly ſettle on the meridian of the ſame in a fixt poſture: no doubt, being drawn ſo violently towards its centre, by the attraction and virtues of the metallick particles whereof it was compoſed: my pride was very agreeably flattered at ſeeing them conſider it ſo attentively: and after obſerving to them, that it was a family piece, and had been made by one of the greateſt maſter's in England, I put it into the old woman's hands, with a deſire to give the ſwivel-pin a ſmall ſhove, by means of which, I told

hear it repeat t
very muſically.

This diſcovery
derful effect: ſhe
praiſes of its weigh
vaſt energy; whic
very great recomm
terlarded her whole
ſeveral new coined t
reſpect, which ſhe
every other word,
turned it me back,
'honour, now this
'bought at firſt, mu
'neas!' Such a paul
fail to mortify my v
claimed with ſome

'gine.' Such a declaration made her ſtare, ſhe very ſubmiſſively begged pardon for her miſtake, and ſhrugging up her ſhoulders while I put it in my fob, obſerved, 'Well, God forbid I ſhould 'adviſe you to part with it at any rate; 'though I believe I could wiſh you to 'a certain perſon, who lies but in the 'next room to you, who would make 'you ample amends for it,'—leering at the ſame time towards her daughter, for whom I muſt own, I had by this time conceived ſome ſmall affection.

When I got to bed, I could not help reflecting on the old woman's hint, of Miſs Betſy's laying in the next room to me, and this thought operated ſo ſtrongly on my imagination, that I left my pillow about one in the morning, and explored my way in the dark, in the hope of finding an agreeable bedfellow; and indeed I ſoon found I had no reaſon to repent of the tryal, for the dear creature's door was kindly left

a preſent of a triffling
however diminiſhed
in the purchaſe, th
convinced a few more
turns would ſoon com
ſupplies by the expe
ſome new moveable.

CHAP. XIII.

Am re-inforced by my ſhip-mate Baudrons.—Viſit the Royal Hoſpital.—Am diverted with the humour of an invalid.—My companion makes an excurſion in the dead of night, which involves him in a very ridiculous adventure.

WHILE I thus baſked in the ſun-ſhine of Miſs Betſy's affections, who poor creature, was the moſt forlorn ſoul alive, whenever I was out of her company, more eſpecially if I carried my watch with me, for which ſhe had lately conceived a moſt ſingular attachment; I was one morning very agreeably ſurprized at the appearance of my ſhipmate Baudrons, the taylor, who had profited ſo much by a hint given him from the cockpit, that he had procured his enlargement, at the expence of a large

ing an apparition,
land him that very
dition of pocketting
furprize.

I was much pleaſ
counter, as I ſhould
with a very entertainir
my journey to Londo
I propoſed ſetting out

The poor fellow wa
at having ſo luckily eſ
that nothing would ſer
a girl, and an immed
the ſhrine of Venus, as

whoſe love had already devoured my whole ſtock of moveables, I made no ſcruple to transfer a part of my preſent abundance to the happineſs of my friend, and promiſed to let him ſupply my place for that very night, at which he teſtified much thankfulneſs and ſatisfaction.

But before night came on, our curioſity led us to enter the Royal Hoſpital for ſick and wounded ſeamen, where the firſt object that preſented itſelf, was a ſailor going to ſuffer the loſs of an offending member, for a diſorder, which though eaſily contracted, yet diſcovers itſelf in more ſtrange appearances, than any other incident to the human body.

The ſurgeons had already got round him, in full preparation to do buſineſs, while their patient lay extended on a bench with a rueful countenance, and gazing about in a moſt wiſtful manner. This ſtate of ſuſpenſion however did not

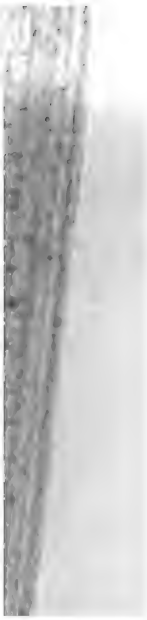
ſuddenly, made a furi
wards, and with grea
claimed, 'Avaſt! a
'ther's, avaſt! do tak
'ſeamen for once in a
'how you ſhould ſplic
'preventer braces here,
'ſtays, don't you thin
'it? I've ſeen many a
'fore now, brought in
'ing: what ſayſt thou
'right?

Here the ſurgeon t
there was an abſolute
putation, the better to
ſequences, that muſt o
while one of his

means to let himſelf be docked, obſerving the maſt had already given way in the partners, and would certainly broach too with him, though under a ballanced mizzen: this account was far from being ſatisfactory to Jack, who immediately cried out, 'What, not one 'inch? carry all away?' and being told not one, he ſtarted up in a tranſport of rage, and declared, he would ſee them all d—d for a parcel of good for nothing ſcoundrels as they were, before any dog there ſhould clap their can-hooks upon him. 'What!' continued he, 'to loſe my 'precious limb, for want of a topping-'lift, or a bob-ſtay? I'll be d——n'd 'firſt.'

When he had teſtified his diſſent in this manner, he ruſhed forward to the door-way in great fury, but uſed ſo little caution in the ſteeridge, that he overſet the whole apparatus prepared on this occaſion; while the principal operator, not having timely notice of

ſo



wards that member;
of the invalid, who
his bolt-ſprit would
out a flying jib for
and then made the b
London; where he r
in ſuch moving terms
of St. Thomas's Ho
undertook the cure, a
ed it, at the expenc
bridge of his noſe, a
order in the palet of hi
he ſuſtains to this day.

At night, when we
apartments, I found m
my companions inflamn
ſo much by

plexion exhibited ſome very uncommon ſymptoms of vivacity, and he begged me with great importunity to make good my promiſe, by ſuffering him to aſſume my birth for that night, when he doubted not, he ſaid, 'to mak it 'geud, at the deel a da Teeler in aw 'his Majeſty's Dominions, was ſik a 'clever chield at the exerciſe o' the nee-'dle.' Being reſolved not to baulk his fancy, I gave him the proper direction as to the bearing and diſtance of Miſs's room door, and while he explored his way thither in a ſtate of joyful expectation, I compoſed myſelf very deliberately to ſleep.

But Morpheus had hardly time to make any impreſſion on my eyelids, before I was arouſed at the tremendous cry of murder, which Baudrons, who it ſeems had miſtaken his way, and ſtumbled into the mother's room, inſtead of the daughter's, echoed out with great vociferation, while a hoarſe voice

—ll of a lump? —
'your maintop-ſail
'limbs, port, elſe
'this here veſſel
'cargo of rack pun
'table.'

But whether this
calculated for the
Baudrons, or his fea
incapable of profiti
given him, is doubt
that in his endeavour
cipitate retreat, he c
and all the furniture
came rattling to the
prizing noiſe; to the
tude of the landlady,
'Oh

'three guineas in the purchaſe, is now 'no more!' Having uttered this pity-moving ejaculation, her noiſe ſubſided, abundance of ſighs eſcaped from her overcharged boſom, and ſhe fainted away, deprived for a time of all ſenſation.

The ſailor was ſo enraged at this manifeſt diſorder in his bedfellow, that he jumped out of bed and ſeized Baudrons juſt as he had reached his own room door, and with a volley of oaths, demanded what brought him there to commit ſuch damage, when it was his watch below, and every body elſe had turned in? My companion endeavoured to excuſe himſelf by laying the blame on the weakneſs of his retentive faculties, which had forced him out in order to promote an evacuation, but this was ſo far from appeaſing his antagoniſt, that after exclaiming, 'What you dog! 'no other place to pump ſhip, but in 'my cabin?' he preſented him with ſo many

this time was reco
fit, was obliged to
ſerved, that ſince t
broke ſo valuable a
and ſpilt half a gui
good punch as eve
tongue, there was
more of a gentleman
make good the loſs;
mour took notice, he
tleman for ought he k
ter, but could be no g
him if he could, to ru
half a league to wind
might have bore awa
clapping his helm a litt

The taylor

in a ſtate of univerſal trepidation, ſo much had this rencounter overpowered his whole fabrick.

CHAP. XIV.

We reſolve to bilk our landlady.—Take the London road, and put up for the night at Sandwich.—Baudrons commits a ſecond blunder, which lays us under the ſuſpicion of highwaymen.—Great zeal of an iriſh tinker, and a recruiting officer on the occaſion.—Are overtaken by Mrs. Coaxum, who arreſts us for damages; but relieved from durance, by the friendly aſſiſtance of ſome ſailors.

BAUDRONS, whoſe thoughts were entirely engroſſed by the preceding adventure, had no ſooner made a lodgement between the ſheets, than his

deranged him, he had
naturals, and no lon
the disappointment o
principally owing to
work of Satan.

Fraught with this
sternation was redoubl
ing himself over hea
the bed-cloaths, he cri
'agony, 'Geud in He
'Belzebub, an a the le
'fitted gang! instead o'
'Mrs. Betty's twa fite hil
'I pat ma haund upo the
'Deevil! Crist hae merc
'na hear fu et curst an b
'the water-kelpie? Geu

But though my companion's head was filled with a thouſand ridiculous fears about ſpirits, &c. and thoroughly perſwaded that Mrs. Coaxum was a witch, yet I ſaw the matter in quite another light; and not at all ſatisfied with the behaviour of her daughter, who had lately begun to form deſigns upon my watch, and alſo drained my pockets to the loweſt ebb, I reſolved to decamp forthwith.

But this was a circumſtance that required ſome conduct in the execution, as we were both conſiderably in debt to our landlady, whoſe great ſkill in multiplication, while it conveyed an idea of her dexterity as a publican, gave me no room to doubt but that our arrears had already been extended to a tolerable amount.

While I was conſidering the next day in what manner to go off unſuſpected, a ſailor came in with a pair of Dutch trowſers

trowſers to pawn, but was offered ſo trifling a return, that he made no ſcruple to expatiate on their ingratitude in a language peculiar to himſelf; and in the courſe of his invectives, perceiving me, he addreſſed me thus, 'What 'chear brother? what chear? I do ſup-'poſe as how you be about ſuch an-'other cruiſe as myſelf, but ſtand by 'your top-ſail hawl-yards! ſo long as 'you have got any duſt a board, it is hail 'fellow well met; but d——me! no 'ſooner has that taken its departure, 'and you are obliged to hawl upon a 'wind, as I am, than it is louſy dog, 'lubberly tarpawlin, how the devil 'came you and I together? ſo I'd have 'you mind your eye, and clap your 'land-tacks on board; for what ſigni-'fies cruizing in the latitude of theſe 'b——s, where nothing is to be got 'but a cargo of brimſtone and gun-'powder?' Having delivered himſelf in this manner, he went out in great anger, and damning his eyes, but he'd blow

blow them all over the town as the biggeſt fireſhips that ever ſpread calicoe.

This advice I looked upon as extremely wholeſome in my preſent ſituation, and communicated my deſign to Baudrons, who was vaſtly delighted at the thoughts of bilking the old witch, as he termed her, and we fixt upon that very night for our departure: for this purpoſe, we packed up the remainder of our clothes and linen, and watching an opportunity, made the beſt of our way to Sandwich, where we arrived after two hours ſmart walking, and put up at a public houſe for that night, extremely delighted at ſo lucky an eſcape by which we had ſaved the whole reckoning: we ſpent the evening with great pleaſure, in company with an Iriſh tinker, and a ſmall recruiting party till bed time.

confounded, when
again ſoon after, a
nance as if he had ſe
ſed me thus; 'Riſe
'for your life! fa c
'comin this gate fu
'witch Coaxum, a
'ma ſaul! gen ye
'beath teen.'

The tinker, who
great attention to
ſooner ſaw him mo
door, than, jumping
he ſeized him by tl
'Arrah now, good
'world, will you be
'ſo ſhivel as to give

'tion, and I deſire the company to 'take notice, I lay claim to the benefit 'of the act of parliament for appre-'hending a highwayman.'

This impudent accuſation enraged me ſo much, that I got up with intent to vindicate the character of my companion from ſo villanous a charge; but was quickly pulled down again by the alarmed ſerjeant, who took notice, that forty pounds was a pretty parcel of money, and that he would not ſcruple to hang his own brother for half the ſum.

By this time a female voice was heard, inquiring if two Scotchmen had not called there that morning; which circumſtance confirming the tinker in his ſuſpicions, that we were certainly robbers, he ran to the door in a tranſport of joy, and uſhered in our landlady with theſe words; 'Step in, Mrs. 'Coax-my-thumb, ſtep in; by my ſhoul, 'you are after being the handſomeſt

'young woman, for your age, in the king-
'dom. Ah, heavens bleſs your ſhweet pret-
'ty faſhe! See, there are the rogues as faſt
'as a thief in a halter. Pray now, how
'much was the robbery? I hope they
'didn't murder you?'

'Robbery!' ſays my landlady, 'rob-
'bery enough, o' my conſcience! the
'villains eat of my bread, drank of my
'drink, and had free grace and regrace
'to my daughter, who is one of the
'cleverеſt girls, tho' I ſay it, that ever
'man laid his leg over, and then ran
'away without paying their reckoning,
'like a couple of mangey Scotch ſcrubs
'as they are. But come, Mr. Parch-
'ment, do your duty.'

On this, a couple of bailiffs came up, and arreſted me at the ſuit of Mrs. Mary Coaxum, houſeholder in Deal, for an action of ten pounds ſterling. Upon objecting to the juſtice of her demand, I was given to underſtand, that the damage

damage done the preceding night by my companion, and which was charged to the account, was a large China punch-bowl, value three guineas, a ſet of China cups and ſaucers, which were then upon the table by way of glaſſes, and two guineas ſhe had paid to Dr. Potion to relieve her from a violent fit of hyſtericks ſhe had fallen into on the occaſion.

The tinker, whoſe expectations of pocketting the forty pounds had a little before been extremely ſanguine, could not bear this privation of all his hopes with the leaſt chriſtian patience, but coming up to the landlady, exclaimed, 'And ſo you ſay there's no robbery in 'the caſe, ha? Arrah, the devil burn 'your ſnout for your news! Here's 'good Mr. Serjeant and I have ſpent 'the whole morning in taking the 'rogues, and now you bring it in only 'petty larceny. By J——s, all's one for 'that, we'll be paid for our ſhoe-leather,

pockets, declared we
and ſhe and her b
d——n'd.

What turn this af
taken was very uncert
cers were obſtinate to
ſoners, and the Serjea
hand, ſwore we ſhou
company till we had a
ſpective regiments; w
ly a large body of ſail
inn, who had been ca
into the river, and we
way to the Downs. Ba
beheld this welcome
haled them by the fr

their brethren in affliction, compaſſionated their caſe, and, to uſe their own language, ſoon made a clear ſhip; and notwithſtanding all the threats of both parties, ſet us at liberty, and even undertook to ſcreen us from a purſuit, till, by the help of ſome carriage, we might ſafely get to London, by detaining our enemies upon the ſpot for that night.

CHAP. XV.

We take places in the Graveſend waggon.—A moſt alarming diſcovery is made by one of the paſſengers, which involves poor Baudrons in a freſh torrent of diſmay.

THIS lucky deliverance afforded us both great pleaſure, as we found ourſelves at once relieved from the power of our exaſperated land-

lady, and the claims of the recruiting ſerjeant, neither of whom bore their diſappointment with either philoſophic or chriſtian patience; but on the contrary, threatened with many expreſſions of revenge, to proſecute the ſailors for effecting a reſcue: but their reſentment and menaces of vengeance were fruitleſs; the midſhipman of the gang, after promiſing to block up the enemy from ſpreading an inch of ſail in chace of us for the firſt twelve glaſſes, by the expiration of which time, he obſerved, we might get as far to the north-ward, as the latitude of London-bridge; adviſed us to clap ſome of the flying machines on board, and crowd all our canvas for the capital.

This council appeared ſo ſalutary, that we ſet out directly in company with the Iriſh tinker, who ſeemed in a mighty haſte till he ſhould get to London; but not before we had teſtified our gratitude to our friendly deliverers, by

by preſenting them with half a piece, which however reduced our joint ſtock to ſomething leſs than two guineas: our companion, whoſe deſire of reaching London ſtill increaſed the faſter we walked, made us put on ſo quick a pace, that we ſoon overtook a large waggon, with the driver of which we bargained for ſeats in his carriage, and took our places accordingly.

Baudrons and myſelf had already made ſhift to inſinuate ourſelves, with no ſmall difficulty, among ſome figures that more reſembled devils than men, and the tinker upon better conſideration, was preparing to aſcend alſo, when one of the company dreſſed up like the ghoſt in Hamlet, and who I afterwards underſtood was the head of a gang of ſtrolling players then in the waggon, and on their way to a neighbouring fair, perceiving ſomewhat in the countenance of this Iriſhman which ſtruck his poetical fancy, after

theſe lines from Kin

This is the man, has
The image of a wick
Lives in his eye; tha
Does ſhew the mood
breaſt.

The tinker, wh
rably correſponded t
and who might with
ranked among that o
guiſhed by the appel
looking dogs, jail bir
heard himſelf accuſe
by an object ſo tren
directly concluded, t
before him was no oth
and ſomething within

'guilty of the murder. Chriſt have 'mercy upon my miſerable ſhoul—I'm 'a dead man.'

Theſe exclamations of guilt, which he uttered in the greateſt deſpair, aſtoniſhed the whole company, which ſo frightened poor Baudrons, that not being able to comprehend what ſort of beings he had got amongſt, he fell upon his knees alſo, and put up ſeveral fervent prayers to heaven to deliver him 'frae the claws of witches, and 'warloks, and lang-nibbed things, ſtill roaring out with great agony, 'Geud heevens, dinna kill ilka yin o's, 'for the ſake o' this Jonas!'

By this time the player, who had very innocently been the cauſe of this commotion, began to ſuſpect that ſomething extraordinary muſt be at the bottom of ſo myſterious an affair; accordingly he jumpt down, and ſeizing the tinker by the collar, demanded the particulars

ticulars of the murder he had mentioned; which ſo confounded the poor wretch, that already ſelf-convicted, he confeſſed, to the amazement of us all, that three nights before, he had robbed a farmer's houſe in Kent, and murdered his ſon and daughter for attempting to eſcape out of a back door; after which he had made off with the booty which was then contained in his wallet.

As we were now very near a ſmall village, he was bound faſt to the waggon, and upon entering the place, carried before a juſtice of the peace, where, ſtill purſued by the hand of heaven, and his own guilty conſcience, he opened ſuch a ſcene of cruelty, as ſtruck every one with terror and diſmay, and at laſt ſigned his own confeſſion.

But when the magiſtrate examined a little farther into the buſineſs, and found how the diſcovery had been brought to light, he failed not to expatiate

patiate on the wonderful ways of Providence, which from cauſes altogether incomprehenſible to man, very often brings ſuch complicated villany to juſtice, and even when the guilty perſon has no other witneſs to his bloody deeds than his own tormented conſcience, and thinks himſelf ſecure from the offended laws of God and man. And indeed, the player moſt ſolemnly declared, that he could not account for the part he had acted on this occaſion, otherwiſe than from a kind of involuntary impulſe, occaſioned by ſomewhat in the features of the criminal, which had ſtruck him at firſt ſight with a moſt unaccountable antipathy; and made him reſolve to affront him at any rate, though he himſelf had no particular reaſon for ſo doing.

However this affair was attended with one good conſequence, that it relieved Baudrons from all farther apprehenſions from the ſight of theſe ſtrollers,

gans of my fellow t
them for ſo many de

CHAP.

Wherein is related a
venture that befel n
the road.

THE examinatic
took up ſo muc
we were preparing to r
in the waggon, we fou
from the inn two hours
by this time it was bo
evening, my friend B
terrified at the thought

ſideration could prevail upon him to ſtir one ſtep farther that night.

Accordingly we put up at an inn, and joined ſome company in the kitchen, not a little ſurpriſed to ſee that our fellow-paſſengers, the players, had taken up their quarters in the ſame houſe, and were preparing to entertain the company with the rehearſal of a new pantomime dance in Harlequin Sorcerer.

This entertainment had a wondrous effect on the ſpectators, and did not fail to captivate the attention of my companion, whoſe muſcles were dilated to a very extenſive length at their frantick geſtures and uncommon garb, which every now and then made him cry out, 'Weel, weel, dance on your ways till 'you'r bunſuck'n an ye like, bat for 'aw that, deel a body ſal ever gar me 'tru bat you'r a wheen faries! at they 'ſal noth!'

While

whole youth and be
derable impreſſion c
found means to ſing
partner, and acquit
during that ſhort
agreed to receive me
bed alſo that very ni
a proper direction wi

Tranſported at
tune, I joined in t
with great pleaſure,
ſkill on the violin ſo r
nager's ſatisfaction, th
propoſal to liſt myſelf
where he doubted not
of me in a ſhort tin
clined his offer with m
the company ſoon aft
I retired to my room

contemplation of my approaching happineſs.

I did not remain long in this ſituation; for no ſooner did I obſerve that a profound ſilence reigned through the manſion, than I made an excurſion from my own apartment, and began to explore my way towards that of my fair Dulcinea. I had made ſo thorough an obſervation, as I thought, before I went up to my room, that I imagined it next to impoſſible for me to be miſtaken, and in this confidence I entered the place, and began to undreſs myſelf in a tumult of joy. Upon approaching the bed, that bed which was to uſher me to the full fruition of my moſt ſanguine wiſhes, I was amazed to hear myſelf accoſted in the following ſtrains, 'My dear, dear Roger, come 'to my longing arms, and finiſh the 'conqueſt of that heart, which was al-'ways yours, and is no longer mine to 'beſtow.'

Before

engaged, when I
in a certain part wi
put me in no little
the number of finge
then the whole te
in an inſtant, and
lity of a retreat, I
beſt endeavours to
virago; and ſucced
a few minutes I red
expreſſions of fondn
murmurings of ſiler
by ſeveral convincin
demonſtrated the in
ſions had on her
culties.

In the

light of a lamp which burnt on that ſide of the gallery, I quickly perceived a tall figure tripping up towards the bed, and diſrobing itſelf of incumbrances in order to make an encroachment upon the premiſes. This, I doubted not, was Roger, who having overſlept his hour of appointment, was willing to make an attonement for his negligence by a double exertion of abilities on the occaſion. But I gave him no time to put his laudable deſigns in execution; for jumping out of bed, I preſented myſelf before his aſtoniſhed eyes in my ſhirt; and finding him ſtruck dumb with terror at ſo unexpected an apparition, I laid hold on that opportunity to effect my own retreat from a place I began to be heartily tired of. With this view I beſtowed upon him a ſmart blow under the chin, accompanied with theſe words in a barbarous accent: 'Tartara 'di phlegeton rapui tonanta diable: 'quick, dog, quick!' which increaſed his

Having finiſhed th
to my ſatisfaction,]
clothes, and withou
them on, made the b
my own apartment ; l
confuſion, found the
on the inſide, and it
great perſuaſion that
Baudrons to open it :
ring my voice, and
was actually his friend,
devil, as he had before cc
he with trembling ſtep
me enter ; but gave m
that upon waking and
in the bed, he had cc
diately that the devil
away, and could attrib

of an old catechiſm he had in his pocket, whereon the name of God was frequently mentioned.

This relation diverted me greatly; but my mirth was increaſed, when he informed me, that he had effectually prevented any viſits from Satan for that night, by ſtuffing up the lock-hole of the door with a piece of the aforeſaid catechiſm, and laying a broom a-croſs the chimney, which, he exultingly obſerved, were ſufficient ſafeguards againſt all the devils in hell.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Set out on the remainder of our journey.—Our fellow-paſſengers deſcribed.—Several curioſities in natural philoſophy are delineated by a quack-doctor, who enforces our credulity by diſplaying a remarkable branch of his profeſſion.

NEXT morning, upon going down ſtairs, I found a large company of people aſſembled in the ſtable-yard, and liſtening with many ſymptoms of amazement in their faces, to a very diſmal relation which Roger, the hoſtler, was exhibiting about the preceding adventure. As his head and ſeveral parts of his body ſtill retained viſible marks of the fall, he found very little difficulty to gain their belief of all he ſaid. Accordingly he with admirable dexterity, ſhifted the ſcene from the bar-maid's bed-chamber to that of his

his own. He obſerved, the fiend had firſt appeared to him in the ſhape of a black cat, afterwards in that of a man, with a long tail and cloven foot, and expatiated on his own perſonal bravery in manfully reſiſting the claws of the devil, with great elocution.

This ſtrange account did not fail to have a wonderful effect on his audience, and many ſtories were told by ſome of them, to prove that there was nothing improbable in this affair; one of them in particular informed the company, as how farmer Johnſon's wife had a child carried away by ſome of Belzebub's meſſengers, and a great log of wood was found in the cradle next morning in its ſtead; and, oh ſtrange to tell! when the parſon of the pariſh adviſed it to be thrown into the fire, it cried out three different times, 'Coming, coming, 'coming,' and then flew up the chimney; preſently after which, their own child

child was found in its cradle again unhurt.

Nay, my friend Baudrons, whoſe whole frame underwent the trembling of an ague-fit at this account, took notice, 'At about twa toumans afore 'he quitted Clackminnan, he had gen 'his gate e cauld night, to drink a 'piggen o yil wi twa or three geud 'neipers, at a chainge houſe a corter 'a mile out e town, bat in gangin 'ower a kirk-yard, he ſaw a mickle 'groit thing tumlin afore him like a 'woo-pack; than it wriggl'd itſel intil 'an unko lang black man, and at the 'laſt an the lang ſwall'd ſae heegh, at 'he cud fairly ſee the meen an the 'ſeeven ſtarns, out atween its twa leo-'mans.'

As for Mrs. Jenny, the bar-maid, who had learned that heroick manner of addreſs from her frequent communication with ſtrolling players, Roger would

would never have any thing to ſay to her for the future; for whether he had really any notion of the buſineſs, or thought his diſappointment owing to the devil, certain it is, he made no ſcruple to declare, ſhe was no better than ſhe ſhould be.

Another waggon now going to ſet out, we laid hold of that opportunity to continue our journey, and aſcended the Diligence, in company with a Jew from Rotterdam, a Wapping landlady from Deal, a young girl who had been at the Downs to ſee her ſweet-heart, and five female paſſengers beſides; for the firſt three miles, the converſation turned wholly upon Roger's adventure, but the arrival of a new comer put a ſtop to any farther diſcourſe upon that ſubject.

This perſon, whoſe attire beſpoke him either a divine or a doctor of phyſic, did not let us long remain in ig-

norance of his profeſſion: he ſurveyed the company with a very inquiſitive eye; and pulling out a bundle of packets from his coat pocket, 'Is there 'any perſon here,' ſays he, 'troubled 'with vapours? here is my anti-hiſte-'rick, alterative ſoluble pills, a moſt 'infallible ſpecifick for all diſorders of 'the brain and nerves; it carries off the 'ſlime which obſtructs the circulation 'in the firſt paſſages; cleans, braces, 'and renovates the coats of the ſtomach, 'and exhilerates the whole man. Then 'again for ſore eyes, this little Phial does 'wonders; ſome bunglers will be for 'uſing ſurgery to the decayed opticks of 'their patients, but I know better, half 'a tea-ſpoonful of this ſovereign pre-'paration, removes all manner of 'ſpecks, films, and dimneſs; gutta 'ſerenas are removed by it in an in-'ſtant, neither can the moſt dreadful 'cataract withſtand the force of its 'powerful influence, but quickly is 'cured, even without the operation of couching;

'couching. But this is not all, this 'here wondrous powder contains the 'very quinteſſence of vipers; it not 'only ſtimulates the party who ſwal-'lows it to ſacrifice to Venus, but if 'mixed with a drop of blood extracted 'from the veins of your ſweet heart, 'makes the party fall ſo violently in 'love with you, that conſummation 'and marriage are the immediate con-'ſequences, though taken in ever ſo 'ſmall a quantity; this incomparable 'love powder is ſold, gentlemen and 'ladies, for ſix-pence a packet, but 'worth a mountain of gold, and full 'of more quickening provocatives, than 'ever that famous whore Cleopatra 'infuſed into the bowl of her lover 'Marc Antony.'

What neither the hyſterick-pills, eye-water, or twenty other medicines could do, this laſt performed with eaſe. Half a dozen purſes were drawn in an inſtant, and though moſt of the fe-

males were not only old, but ugly, yet in a few minutes, the doctor had not a ſingle packet of his love-powder remaining unſold.

Having diſpoſed of this part of his wares to ſo good advantage, he aſſumed much gaiety, and told us, it was not for want, but purely for the love he bore to his fellow creatures, he followed that profeſſion, for that he had it in his power to be the richeſt man in England. 'I have a machine,' ſays he, 'which is admirably adapted for the diſ'covery of hidden treaſures. I have no 'more to do but take an obſervation with 'it at ſome particular times and ſeaſons, 'and if there be any gold, precious 'ſtones, or indeed any thing of value, 'within a certain diſtance of it, I ſel'dom fail to make a diſcovery of the 'ſame to my own emolument.'

The Jew, who had only laughed at the former part of his harangue, now for the firſt time began to prick up his ears

ears at this intelligence, and not doubting but what he hinted at was of the nature of the philoſopher's ſtone, told the quack he ſhould be proud of his acquaintance, and gave him a note of his lodgings in London; and to heighten his importance, obſerved, that for all his mean appearance, he was not what he ſeemed, but choſe to travel that way for fear of being robbed on the road; ſo ſaying, he produced a purſe full of guineas as a convincing teſtimony of the truth of his aſſertions.

One of the women now aſked him why he did not make uſe of his machine to get more money? and though he did not want it himſelf, yet his friends might: and beſides, he might perhaps loſe the inſtrument, before he had made his fortune. 'Why truly, Madam,' replied he, 'the government is ſo jealous of my knowledge in this branch of buſineſs, that, would you believe it? they have

'brought the practice of this noble art 'under the denomination of felony: 'but to convince you I am not declar- 'ing an untruth, you yourſelf ſhall 'be witneſs of the wonders of its effi- 'cacy in theſe caſes.' So ſaying, he jumped out of the waggon, and mounting a returned horſe then at the tail of it, pulled out a piſtol, and preſenting it to her breaſt, with a volley of oaths, and as many bitches, demanded the leathern purſe he had juſt before ſeen, which having obtained, he proceeded to unload the Jew, and every one of us in our turns; and pocketting his ſeveral prizes, with a good morrow to ye ladies and gentlemen, rode off at a hand-gallop a-croſs the heath, to the no ſmall confuſion of the parties concerned.

He was no ſooner gone, than every mouth was opened to exclaim againſt the barbarous villain who had ſerved them ſuch a ſcurvy trick: the powders were

were thrown away in great rage; from a very natural concluſion, that, as the author was an impoſtor, they muſt be good for nothing; and for Baudrons, he declared, 'that in geud troth, he did 'nae like the chield frae the beginning, 'for at nae body wid dee ſik things 'as draw out focks bleed to mak poo-'ders o, but deevils imps, and ſik like 'things.'

As Baudrons and myſelf appeared but as common ſailors, and could not be thought to have much money, the doctor paſſed us over for a few looſe pence, and we arrived ſafe at London, without meeting any farther diſaſter; when Baudrons went to a friend's houſe in the Hay-market, and I towards the inn I intended to put up at, not without recollecting a Latin verſe which I thought well enough adapted to this robbery:

Sic vos non vobis, munera fertis oves;

Arrive at my inn. —
by an old ſon of Sat
Exchange, whom I
rately. — Go to a
Hounſditch, who f
on ſuſpicion of its
Procure its recovery
meeting with a fri
vers the fraudulent p
tribe of men, harang
danger of truſting to a
buys my whole fortun
for ready money.

SO ſoon as I had parted

Inn to lodge, being a place I had often directed letters to, on a former occaſion. I was agreeably ſurpriſed at finding myſelf in ſo glorious and magnificent a city, and ſoon perceived that all my ideas had fallen vaſtly ſhort in regard to its beauty and largeneſs.

I ſpent ſome days in viſiting every thing curious to the eye of a ſtranger, and one morning wandered to the Royal Exchange, where I diverted myſelf in examining the multiplicity of quack bills that are placed up there, as a decoy to the ignorant and unhealthy. I had got very intently peruſing one of them in particular, and in wonderful admiration of the art of man, who could make up a pill extracted from the very rays of the ſun, for ſo I explained theſe words, wrote in large golden capitals; *Pillula radiis ſolis extracta:* when a very corpulent, elderly gentleman, perceiving me ſo earneſtly engaged, and in a ſort of

' if he would engag
' to prolong the date
' a thouſand years. I
' poſition upon the
' beſt of it is, they
' p—l—nt, and licen
' poiſon by retail, if t
' the neceſſary ſum f
' which means, pulv
' often paſſes for n
' while a phial of cham
' with a few ſpoonfuls
' comes a moſt ſovere
' p—x. Do but obſerv
' the impudence of thi
ing to one of Doct
' would men only be w
' they might enjoy all

'pretenders. By your ruddy com-
'plexion, I preſume, you are from
'Scotland, Sir: very few of our Lon-
'doners bear ſuch bloom in their coun-
'tenances; which is all owing to
'the malignant poiſon of theſe ſame
'quacks.'

I was very glad to find a man ſo fa-miliar and communicative, and told him that I was indeed a Scotchman, was lately come from Deal, and had been but a few days in town. 'I dare 'to ſay, you have been at ſea Sir,' ſays he. I told him he was right; upon which he obſerved, that of all the men in the world, ſailors were the moſt fa-lacious, as being confined for months together to a ſaline diet, and reſtrained from the neceſſary commerce of wo-men: 'In which caſe,' ſays he, 'they 'have copied the Italians to a miracle; 'and found means to ſupply that de-'fect by a very innocent, and harmleſs 'expedient: Did you know, Sir, one 'Sandy

'Sandy Macgriggor? he was a pretty 'young fellow, and I was often very 'happy in his company: he went down 'to Edinburgh ſome two years ago, 'and left me the moſt diſconſolate man 'alive; for we agreed like two ſworn 'brothers, and correſponded perfectly 'well in all moods and tenſes. I am a 'dear lover of the Scotch in general, 'and for his ſake will treat you, if 'you will go along with me, with 'ſome choice liquor called balſam of 'life, at a neighbouring houſe hard 'by.' I aſſented to this with great pleaſure, not a little glad of having met with a man who ſeemed ſo great a lover of my country, and accompanied him to a certain houſe in Roſemary-Lane.

While I was waiting in expectation of ſeeing and taſting this precious liquor he had been praiſing all the way thither, I was ſoon given to underſtand what ſort of a companion I had got with, by his deſcending to particulars

culars which at once both ſurpriz̃ed and ſhocked me.

On this unexpected diſcovery, I roſe up in great confuſion, and giving him to underſtand, that his principles were both wicked and deteſtable, went towards the door, with intent to avoid the ſight of ſo abhorred a monſter: but it ſeems my beaſtly admirer was too much enflamed with the colour in my cheeks, which by this time were ſufficiently reddened with anger, to let the matter reſt here; for he began to handle me very roughly, uſing both threats and promiſes, to bring me to a compliance; which ſo tranſported me with rage, that, being naturally cholerick, I pulled out my penknife, and ſoon diſabled him from farther exploits of that kind for ſome time, by deſperately wounding him in the object of my diſpleaſure.

When I had given way to the emotions of my revenge in this manner, I quitted

mankind, and that
my mind was in no d
with ſuch diabolical

In a few days I ſoc
want of a freſh ſuppl
yet I could find nobo
with that very nece
this induced me to thi
money upon my wat
cordingly carried to
ſhop in Hounſditch,
to lend me ten guineas
able.

He ſurveyed me ve
ſome time after this d
thinking my appearan

'you ſent here with it by another?' I replied it was my own, and repeated my deſire to know what he could advance if he thought that ſum too much, alledging the watch was well worth thirty. 'That may very well be,' ſaid the pawn-broker with a leer; 'but 'till 'I am better aſſured that this was not 'picked up upon Black-heath laſt 'Sunday night, I muſt beg leave to 'ſecure both it and you alſo.' As he ſaid this, he made faſt the door, and bid his apprentice go out and call a conſtable.

I was very much frightened at this manner of proceeding; for though I knew myſelf innocent of that or any other crime ſince my being in town, yet I had heard ſuch terrible ſtories of people that were frequently ſworn out of their lives by a ſet of villains, that I began to tremble like an aſpin leaf, and gave myſelf over for a dead man. This, the broker did not fail to attribute

out. And that he had
ſuch doings already,
were permitted to pa
would be no keeping

Having, as he th
intimidated me for
not in the leaſt doubt
certainly guilty, he
compaſſion that ſuch
I was ſhould bring
timely end by going
and, opening the doo
as faſt as poſſible, be
ſhould come, and he
jumped out of the back
made my eſcape; obſe

pawnbroker, th
for my appearance
took me along witl
glad at having reco
again, which a littl
in ſome fears for.

Juſt as I quitted th
the apprentice, who l
to call the conſtable,
the glaſs of a window
lour. This diſcove
greatly; but when I
circumſtance, he mad
informed me, that it w
ry for a pawnbroker to
and let the thief eſcap
convert to his own ac

in ſuch a manner that the right owner could never diſcover them to be their property; and as for the thief, he ſeldom came back again to aſk queſtions.

I then told him the affair I had lately had with the old ſon of S—d—m, and in what manner I had ſerved him, at which he laughed heartily, obſerving that, for the ſmall time I had been from Scotland, I was a very conſiderable adventurer, and then invited me home with him to dinner; during which he took an opportunity to inquire the reaſon of my coming to London. On this I related my firſt going to ſea, with the reaſons that induced me to take ſuch a ſtep, and told him, that I intended with the firſt opportunity to go home again, and draw my fortune out of the hands of my uncle, the moment I became of age.

'I be-

'before you can demand
'and take my word for
'finds his firſt attempt
'will, before that time is
'upon ways and means
'out of the whole ſum.
'would you believe it?
'greater ſcoundrel this d
'ſun, than that ſame fat
'mine, though I ſay it.
'hundred pounds for my v
'I never could get but th
'no touching his caſh, he i
'a miſer. Beſides, the ol
'kick off ſhortly, and th
'in a fine ſituation with
'ſon, who has lately comme
'and will

'have in the world. Take the advice 'of a friend: leave all thoughts of 'going home for this time, and en-'deavour to get ſome body to buy it all 'of you for ready money. Conſider, 'a year is a long time, and many revo-'lutions happen, even to the over-'turning of whole ſtates in the half of 'that period.'

I was tranſported at this agreeable propoſal, as I began to fancy that there was great probability in what he ſaid, but let him know, it would be ſomewhat difficult to find any perſon who knew my affairs well enough to incline them to make a bargain of that kind.

'Very true, indeed, Sir,' replied my friend, 'your obſervation is extremely 'juſt, I aſſure you, and am pleaſed to 'ſee a young man of ſo much penetra-'tion. Why truly, as you ſay, there is

'no

'broken reed as to
'pendance on that part
'do you think of me fo
'would willingly throw
'of pounds, only to hav
'to be revenged on th
'ſome former indigni
'judge myſelf a tole
'him, even at his owr
'have alſo ſome buſin
'at this time, beſides a
'ledge of your ſituatio
'all of you directly, an
'we ſhall agree upon
'think well of the follo
'for I am a man of f
'love diſpatch.——Le

'a neceſſity for that ſum to be inſured 'for one whole year, to ſecure the pur- 'chaſer, in caſe you ſhould die under 'age. In the ſecond place, you are 'to give writings under your hand, 'thereby obliging yourſelf to make 'good, when you ſhall arrive at years 'of maturity, what you engaged for 'while a minor: and in the laſt place, 'you are to make ſuch a reaſonable 'diſcount for ready money, as the ſlip- 'pery ſituation of the caſe requires; for 'you muſt underſtand, that any obligation 'you can give while under age is not 'valid by law, but yet I will truſt 'to your own generoſity in that ar- 'ticle.—Do you take me?'——I told him, very well.——'Why then,' continued he, 'what would you be wil- 'ling to give by way of diſcount, for 'ready money?'

I told him, I was by no means acquainted with ſuch matters; but if he pleaſed

pleaſed to make a propoſal, it was in my choice, whether to accept it or not. Upon which this honeſt, upright, and conſcientious friend, with great compoſure, aſked me what I thought of two thouſand pounds, down upon the nail, clear of all deductions? for he would not exceed that ſum by a ſingle farthing.

I thought it a diſagreeable circumſtance to loſe one thouſand pounds out of three, for only the anticipation of a twelve-month, and told him as much: but then he found means to awaken my ſuſpicion ſo much about the uncertainty of my uncle's affairs, by obſerving, that a bird in hand was worth two in the buſh, and that a man was never ſure of any thing, let the proſpect be ever ſo promiſing, till he is fairly in poſſeſſion; illuſtrating his aſſertions by quoting numberleſs inſtances of the like nature, which, by the villainy of guardians,

dians, chalked out work daily in the courts of chancery, while the poor deluded clients were ſtarving for bread: that his examples, together with the thought of being put in inſtant poſſeſſion of ſo much gold, and the ſtrong deſire I had to become independent, overcame my objections, and I yielded to the ſpecious deluſions of this blood-ſucker, and in a few days had the whole buſineſs tranſacted to our mutual ſatisfaction.

But I was very much aſtoniſhed, when I afterwards found, as ſhall be ſhewn in its place, that this had been a concerted thing betwixt him and my uncle, who, finding he could not get rid of me any other way, without endangering his reputation, was reſolved to fleece me as much as poſſible, before I ſhould have it in my power to demand my fortune in courſe of law; well knowing my prodigal diſpoſition, and that when once my money was gone, I ſhould neither

...my bargain; and
full two thouſand pour
give myſelf no trouble
ter, as I found myſelf
lis of a kingdom, wh
that was inviting to the ſ
in the greateſt variety.

CHAP. XIX.

Commence a ſmart fellow.—Take chambers in the temple.—Buy a horſe of great parentage, for which I pay forty guineas.—Go to Epſom races, and win a round ſum of money.—Dance with a young lady at a ball.—Loſe my watch.—Am taken in by a ſharper, and fleeced of every penny.—My fine horſe turns out a moſt egregious bite.—I recover my watch by a ſtrange accident.

BEING now in poſſeſſion of ſo large a ſum of money, I reſolved to take a full ſwing of pleaſure, before I ſhould attach myſelf to the leaſt buſineſs: thinking the experience I ſhould reap thereby, to be more than a ſufficient recompence for any diſburſements I might be at on the occaſion.

hundred, I thought it
matter to make my
place as London. I
ſelf with ſtore of ver
linen, bought a gol
ſilver-hilted ſword, a
of a new acquaintance
took a ſet of elegant
Temple. It was not l
got upon a good foot
young flaſhy blades in
hood, every one of wl
peculiar attachment to
I began to enjoy the
town with a high reliſh

I had not been long
ing ſituation before Epſ

ſelf a horſe, which I fancied would add greatly to my appearance, rather than to be ſeen on a common hack. I communicated my deſign to the maſter of a tavern where I uſed frequently to ſpend the evening, and deſired him to recommend me to ſome one who could ſupply me with a handſome gelding. 'Bleſs me, Sir,' ſays my obliging landlord, 'this is the luckieſt thing in nature! you could not have applied to 'a fitter perſon in the world than to me 'on ſuch an occaſion. There is Jack 'Newbury, the moſt famouſeſt fellow 'for horſe-fleſh in England, juſt now 'in town. I'm perfectly well acquainted 'with him, and am ſure he can fit you 'to admiration; but then you muſt 'come up to his price, for he always 'deals upon honour.'

I told him, that I would not ſcruple a good price, on condition I was uſed well, and then gave him a note of my lodgings. In conſequence of this, I was

waited upon the very next morning by the Jockey himſelf, who ſaid, if I pleaſed to ſtep down to the repoſitory in ———, I might have an opportunity to ſee ſome of the choiceſt cattle in the kingdom, and could be furniſhed from ten pounds to five hundred.

The firſt horſe he brought out was a very fine one to all appearance, which he obſerved had won the ſubſcription-plate at Newmarket three years before, and had been late in the poſſeſſion of the earl of Winchelſea. 'But mount 'him, Maſter,' ſays he, 'mount him; 'you'll find him as gentle as a lamb, 'and yet ſo full of ſpirit, that he'll out-'ſtrip the fleeteſt hounds, and leap a 'five-barred gate without heſitation. 'I was offered fifty guineas for him laſt 'ſummer from Heathſhot the highway-'man; but you know, Sir, it is a very 'wrong thing to diſtreſs the public by 'mounting a reſolute fellow on a horſe, 'that, modeſtly ſpeaking, might eaſily

'him

'him to diſtance the moſt ſtrenuous 'purſuit. No, no, I could never anſwer 'that to my conſcience! and you know, 'Sir, that conſcience and honour are 'very precious things, eſpecially among 'us men of principle.

After this, I was entertained with the ſight of half a ſcore more of his horſes, every one of which, upon production, did not fail to be the very beſt bred in England. But the article of the highwayman had tickled my fancy exceedingly. I thought that certainly a robber muſt be a good judge of horſes, as his whole ſafety muſt in a manner depend upon his ſkill in that particular, and dwelt upon this one with the greateſt attention. This the Jockey no ſooner perceived, than he proceeded thus:

'I ſee, Sir, you are a good judge, 'by your ſurveying Baldface ſo earneſt-'ly: he has certainly a very fine ap-'pearance, and might grace a General

'in a triumph: Had poor unfortunate 'Heathſhot only come up to the price 'of him, and concealed his intentions 'as to his uſe, (for you muſt under-'ſtand, Sir, that the ſame principle that 'kept me from ſelling him the horſe, 'kept me alſo from betraying him to 'juſtice, when I found out his way of 'life; for in theſe caſes my ſenſe of 'honour, Sir, is extremely nice) I ſay, 'had he conducted matters more pru-'dently, he would hardly have ſuffered 'two louſy farmers, mounted on coach-'horſes, to have taken him ſo eaſily, 'and might, to this day, have eſcaped a 'ſcragging; but it wasn't his fate to have 'him, and I am glad of it. No, no, Ara-'bia was never pillaged to furniſh high-'waymen with horſes; God forbid!— 'I believe I can trace his pedigree to the 'tenth generation. — Let me ſee —— 'Baldface the ſon of lord D——s's fa-'mous bay-horſe Remus, out of a mare 'belonging to his grace the duke of 'Hamilton, who won the give and take

'plate

'plate ſome years ago at York races; 'his grand-dam, Mr. Meredith's Filly; 'his great grand-dam, Tantwivy; his 'great, great grand-dam, the marquis 'of Rockingham's Sweepſtakes; his 'great, great, great grand dam, Miſs 'Biddy Wriggle, full ſiſter to the noted 'horſe Driver, got by the earl of Go-'dolphin's famous mountaineer Cullum 'Arabian —— So that you ſee, Maſter, 'he is come of ſome of the beſt families 'in Europe.'

This long detail of father, mother, and great grandmothers appeared ſo ſatisfactory to me, that, with ſome emotion, I demanded his price; for that this individual horſe, or none, was for my money.

'Why, Sir,' ſays the Jockey, 'I 'would by no means have you to buy 'a pig in a poke: to be ſure, you could 'not appear at Epſom better mounted, 'was you to ſearch all England — but 'then you may ſcruple his price; and

'such bargains are not to be found 'every day. I have already obſerved 'to you, that I was offered fifty guineas 'ſome months ago for him; but as I 'told you before, my conſcience would 'not ſuffer me to part with him to a 'highwayman; howſomdever, as you 'are a gentleman, I will ſell him to 'you for forty pieces, and under that 'ſum he ſhall not depart theſe ſtables 'till I carry him down into the coun-'try.'

I thought this a deal of money for a horſe, and offered him thirty, reſolving, however, to have him at any rate, rather than delay viſiting the races the very next day; but he took this offer as a very high affront, and after obſerving, 'I ſee, Sir, he is not for 'your purſe,' ſtalked away in great dudgeon. This method of procedure convinced me beyond a doubt, that it was certainly a good purchaſe; I therefore called after him, and advanced directly

reſtly to five more; but ſtill he continued inflexible, bid me ſurvey his enchanting forehead, his exquiſite limbs, and beautiful mould; and, holding up his hands in a ſort of admiration, pronounced, 'Good God, what a pity 'it is that ſo pretty a gentleman ſhould 'ſtand in his own light, and let ſlip this 'only opportunity he ever can or will 'have to fit himſelf with a horſe that 'would do honour to his graceful ap'pearance!'

This flattering obſervation wrought ſo powerfully on my vanity, that, without farther altercation, I agreed to give him his price, which I accordingly paid down upon the nail, and that very evening took the tour of Hampſtead and Highgate upon my new purchaſe, and could not help thinking all the way as I rode, that every body was charmed with my eaſy carriage and horſemanſhip.

Having completed this affair ſo much to my ſatisfaction, I dreſſed myſelf next morning very elegantly, and took the road to Epſom, not a little proud of being mounted on the back of ſo gallant a prancer. At my arrival on the courſe I was wonderfully delighted at ſurveying the crowds of people that were there already, and at the vaſt number that came driving in every minute.

While I was gazing very attentively upon theſe things, which appeared quite new to me, a gentleman, dreſſed in ſilver and green, came up, and patting me very familiarly on the ſhoulder, cried, 'Twenty to five on that bay-'mare, my lord: ſhe beats Sweepſtakes, 'all hollow, for a cool hundred.' Tho' I did not underſtand one word of this curious ſalute, yet I was very glad to be taken for a lord; and aſſuming a look of importance, replied, 'I don't 'think ſhe will.' On this he pulled out a large

a large number of bank-notes, and offered to lay twenty to five on the ſide of his favourite; when I told him, I waited for a ſpecial party, and had no leiſure to attend the iſſue: but, however, I would lay him ten guineas upon equal terms, and he would find me on the courſe at his convenience.

So ſaying, I rode off in great ſtate, and began to fancy I muſt certainly have ſomething very ſtriking about me, to be taken for a nobleman at firſt ſight. Zounds, thought I, there is nothing like cutting a figure! I ſhall certainly make my fortune very ſpeedily, by ſome lady of quality falling in love with me.

In order, therefore, to keep up the gentleman's good opinion of me, I took occaſion to mix among ſome very genteel company, where there were very great bets going forward; and tho' at firſt I behaved but awkwardly, yet by the help of a little reſolution, which I ſummoned

moned on the occaſion, I quickly acted my part to admiration; and joining in among the gameſters, ſoon found myſelf one hundred and fifty pounds richer than I was in the morning, and all this by blind chance; for I knew not one jot about the matter, but accepted of every bet that was laid me.

Tranſported at this lucky beginning, I brightened up exceedingly, and that very night inſinuated myſelf ſo far into the good graces of an agreeable lady I had ſeen upon the courſe, that I had the happineſs to dance at the ball with her, and the pleaſure to find that I conducted myſelf in ſuch a manner as to gain the approbation of my fair partner. Next morning I took the liberty to wait upon her to her lodgings, when ſhe complained grievouſly of the gentleman's rudeneſs who had brought her from London, who, ſhe ſaid, was ſo addicted to the bottle, that he made no ſcruple to be guilty of the moſt ſhock-

ſhocking indecencies, rather than forſake ſo darling a companion; and took notice, that he was ſo little recovered from his laſt night's debauch, that ſhe was even under the ſhocking apprehenſion of being deprived of the diverſions of the day, for want of a male attendant. I thought this a very proper opportunity to offer her my ſervice to wait upon her in the quality of a very humble ſervant; which, after ſome ſeeming heſitation, ſhe conſented to, and I went out full of joy to beſpeak a four-wheeled phaeton, the better to cut a figure upon the courſe.

When we arrived there, the gentleman in the ſilver and green came up, and very complaiſantly told me, I had won the wager; at the ſame time putting a twenty pound bank-note into my hand, for which I gave him change; while he took notice, that he was never more deceived in his life than to find Sweepſtakes taken in ſo queerly, and that

that the d——n'd Jockeys hadn't acted upon principles of honour.

This freſh acquiſition encouraged me ſo much, that I began to fancy a man might ſoon make an ample fortune, if he had the leaſt inſight into the nature of ſo important a branch of buſineſs, which I ſaw was ſtudied by moſt of the Nobility and the principal people of the nation. That I therefore might not be wanting to myſelf at a time when my ſtars ſeemed more than ordinary propitious, I fell to work with double vigour, but had ſoon reaſon to repent ſeverely of my folly; for in a very ſhort time I had loſt not only all my winnings, but even the forty guineas I had brought out from London in my pocket. This fatal loſs chagrined me ſtrangely; I curſt my ſtupidity a thouſand times, that had prevented me from going off, when I had won ſo largely; and I was obliged to deſiſt from farther buſineſs, merely for want of caſh.

All

All this time my fair companion was engaged deeply in play; but I was not a little confounded, when, upon her loſing a conſiderable ſum, ſhe referred her antagoniſt to me, who, ſhe obſerved, always diſburſed the money on thoſe occaſions. Alarmed at this inſinuation, I turned ſhort upon her, and demanded the meaning of that expreſſion; when her creditor cried out, 'Pſha, pſha, 'Sir! it an't at all like a gentleman to 'affront your lady for ſuch a trifle. It 'is very mean of you. — Prythee diſ-'burſe the cole with a good grace; it 'is no more than twenty guineas.' 'My lady! Sir,' ſaid I, 'what do you 'mean by that? ſhe is no lady of mine, 'and if you think otherwiſe, you will 'find yourſelf miſtaken. — Come, Ma-'dam, I find how it is; I ſhall, there-'fore, do myſelf the pleaſure to con-'vey you ſafe back to your drunken 'paramour; for at preſent, I am nei-'ther in the mind nor condition to con-'tinue this farce any longer.' So ſay-

ing,

ing, I gave the horſes a laſh and was making off the premiſes, when ſhe cried out, 'Where are you driving to, 'you Scotch bl——d of a b——ch? 'What, I ſuppoſe you are ſome pitiful 'ſcoundrel of an attorney's clerk, who 'has hired a horſe by the day, in order 'to impoſe upon the public under the 'character of a man of fortune;' and uttering a volley of epithets, no way adapted to her genteel appearance, jumped down in great anger, and committed herſelf to the care of my gentleman in green, who, by the way, had won almoſt every farthing of my money.

I now drove back in great agony, to think I had loſt more in one day by my folly, than would have maintained me like a gentleman for a twelve-month; and called up my landlord with intent to diſpoſe of my watch, but I ſoon found that this moveable had fled my pocket without my privity, and I began

gan to think, not without the help of my late companion.

I had now no better expedient left me, I thought, than to raiſe ſome money by parting with my horſe, and accordingly I applied myſelf to my landlord for that purpoſe; but mine hoſt very ſagaciouſly told me, that it was dangerous to meddle with thoſe matters till a man ſhould be better informed, Who was Who; and then ſtroking the horſe, deſired to know what I might have given for him. 'Why, Sir,' ſaid I, 'he coſt me forty guineas yeſterday, 'and I had him a good bargain; but as 'I have occaſion for ſome caſh at preſent, I ſhould be willing to bate a ſmall 'matter of that ſum.' 'I believe you 'would, truly, Sir,' quoth this diſcerning publican, 'and not without reaſon 'neither: but at preſent you may think 'yourſelf well off with a quarter of the 'money, for the horſe is broken-winded.

'and

'and will ſoon be fit only to be put in 'a ſand-cart.'

This was a thunder-ſtroke to me indeed. I related the whole circumſtance of my buying him, with the hiſtory of his nativity, actions, and deſcent, and vowed revenge moſt bitterly againſt the Jockey who had ſo cheated me. 'Why, look ye, Sir,' ſaid he, 'I don't ſee how you can re-'cover any damage, or even ſue him 'for a fraud, as he'll certainly inſiſt that 'you have ſtrain'd him at the races, 'and ſo elude your expoſtulations that 'way.'

Ruefully convinced of the reaſonableneſs of this obſervation, all thought of attempting to right myſelf by law ſubſided; and my mind was wholly employed in contriving in what manner I ſhould defray the expences I had ran into: after much debate with myſelf,

I was

I was at laſt conſtrained to pledge a brilliant, worth ten guineas, with my landlord, till I ſhould redeem the ſame, by a return of three pounds, which with great difficulty he was prevailed upon to lend me, after having conſulted half a ſcore people on the occaſion.

Juſt as I was going to ſet out with a heavy heart, I obſerved a vaſt mob coming up the town, and was not a little ſurpriſed to ſee the fine gentleman in green, who had ſo complaiſantly honoured me with the title of lordſhip, led away by a great concourſe of people before a Juſtice of the peace, being charged with forging a large number of bank-notes, which he had put off during the races, in return for good gold. Being very inquiſitive to ſee the iſſue of this ſtrange diſcovery, I joined in with the cavalcade, and followed him to the Magiſtrate's; when, lo! upon ſearching him, the firſt thing that

ared was no other than my ividual watch, which I chal- upon the inſtant; and upon ap- pealing to my landlord, who gave his teſtimony that it was the ſame he had ſeen in my hand the night before, I re- covered this utenſil a ſecond time, and found myſelf ſome pounds lighter in my ſpirits ſince this unexpected ac- quiſition.

END of VOL. I.

THE

LIFE

AND

REAL ADVENTURES

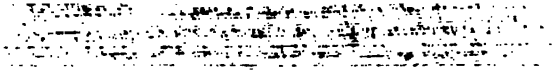
OF

Hamilton Murray.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for the AUTHOR;
And Sold by J. BURD, Printer, in New-Street, Shoe-Lane.
MDCCLIX.



THE

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

Am accoſted by an old acquaintance, with whom I return to London.—He carries me to a coffee-houſe, where I am entertained with the diſcuſſion of a Scripture text.—Etymology and uſe of the word Damnation.—A piece of humour is practiſed upon an old batchelor, which produces much diverſion. page 1

CHAP. II.

Reſolve to viſit Tunbridge.—Set out in the ſtage-coach, and have an opportunity to obſerve the ſingular humour of one of the paſſengers.—Are attacked on the road by a couple of highwaymen, where a ſpecimen of ſea-courage is exhibited worthy the imitation of all brothers of the blade. 40

CHAP. III.

Wherein the Characters of my fellow-travellers are farther diſplayed. 49

CHAP. IV.

Viſit the wells.—Some account of that place, and the company that frequent it.—Am introduced to ſeveral of the lawyer's acquaintance.—Viſit the walks, the ſhops, and coffee-houſes.

houſes. — Engage at billiards, and come off a winner. — Take lodgings on mount Sinai.—Character of monſieur Rhubarbe our landlord, and that of his wife. 59

CHAP. V.

An odd occurrence happens at my lodgings, which involves my landlord in a moſt ridiculous ſituation.—In conſequence of a very diſaſtrous accident, I leave the Wells in diſgrace, and return to London. 72

CHAP. VI.

I am viſited by the ſtock-broker, who finds great fault with my method of life. — Harangues me on the advantages reſulting from a ſtrenuous application to buſineſs, and adviſes me to commence trader. — I approve of his propoſal, and ſell off my moveables,

I go to dine with
Am entertainec
with the humou
ternity. — Mak
on the change. -
branch of inſu
upon by a new c
me with his e
liteneſs.

CHA

According to app
my cuſtomer at
Am received in
manner. — A fri
who diſcounts n

pounds in my debt.—Puts me off with trifling evaſions, till I experience a new ſyſtem of roguery.—My uncle turns out a moſt conſummate villain. 108

CHAP. IX.

I prevent a young woman from ſuicide.—Carry her home to my lodgings, and make an intereſting diſcovery. 131

CHAP. X.

The Story of Miſs SUKEY PATTERSON. 143

CHAP. XI.

I make Sukey an honeſt woman by marriage.—Go after a place of two hundred a year, which proves a bite upon the public.—Am horribly chagrined, but relieved by a ſecond advertiſement.

vertiſement. — Overhear a diſcourſe in a coffee-houſe, and am prevented from being taken in by a freſh diſcovery. 188

CHAP. XII.

Lay aſide all thoughts of place-hunting. — Reſolve to turn publican, and apply to a regiſter-office. — Am harangued by the maſter, who inveighs bitterly againſt the villainy of brewers and diſtillers. — Profeſſes great friendſhip, and introduces me to a houſe in Southwark. — He practiſes a remarkable inſtance of his calling, but is prevented from reaping the fruits of his attachment by a queer diſcovery. — Sukey is ſeized with a violent fever, and dies the third day. 210

The CONTENTS.

CHAP. XIII.

In order to diſſipate my melancholy, I go to Maidenhead races. — Engage in play, and carry off an hundred and ſeventy pounds.— Find means to over-reach a ſharper for two hundred guineas. 232

THE

THE

LIFE and ADVENTURES

OF

HAMILTON MURRAY.

CHAP. I.

Am accoſted by an old acquaintance, with whom I return to London.—He carries me to a coffee-houſe, where I am entertained with the diſcuſſion of a Scripture text.—Etymology and uſe of the word Damnation.—A piece of humour is practiſed upon an old batchelor, which produces much diverſion.

WHILE I was hugging myſelf on my good fortune at ſo unexpectedly recovering my watch, a young fellow, who had fol-

Surpriſed to find r
accoſted by a ſtrang
had not the leaſt k
to think him anothe
tended to ſound the c
a ſecond time; but
ceived in that partic
claimed, 'Zounds,
'me then? and have
'got your old acqua
'vage, who aſſiſted y
'ture of Tickletext a

This obſervation o
once; I recollected hi
and expreſſed my ſatisf
in a place where I ha

wholeſale chemiſt in Piccadilly; and that Sukey Patterſon had been brought to bed of a fine boy, ſoon after my departure, and had been ſo ill uſed by the ſchoolmaſter on that account, that ſhe had diſappeared all at once, and it was feared that ſhe had laid violent hands on herſelf, to get rid of his barbarous treatment.

This information diſtreſſed me greatly. I could not look back on the happy minutes I had paſſed with that dear girl, and think of her unhappy fate, without ſhedding tears. I felt a return of all my former tenderneſs for her, and the impoſſibility to make her any recompence for her ſufferings, increaſed my anguiſh ten thouſand fold. I vowed bitter revenge on the inhuman villain, who, by his barbarity, had drove my adorable girl to this wretched choice; and was ſo diſpirited at the mournful recollection of what the innocent babe muſt have ſuffered by her loſs, that I

was ſcarce able to ſupport myſelf under it; and Dick was even fain to make uſe of all his rhetorick to prevent me from committing ſome extravagancy on myſelf. He alledged, that very poſſibly ſhe might be ſtill alive, notwithſtanding the general belief of the neighbourhood to the contrary, ſince it was only founded on ſurmiſe, and adviſed me to advertiſe her by her own name, with a detail of particulars, in all the newspapers. This hint produced ſo good an effect on my mind, that I ſuffered myſelf to be comforted; and Dick promiſed to diſpel all remains of gloom and low ſpirits on this occaſion, by carrying me to a ſort of club, of which he was a member, as ſoon as we reached town, where the humours of the company would prove a never-failing antidote for any future attack of the ſpleen.

Glad of this opportunity to chaſe away thoſe melancholy reflections which ſtill hung upon my mind, I accompanied

nied him with great pleaſure to a coffee-houſe in Fleet-ſtreet; and, upon entering the room above ſtairs, obſerved a large group of figures ſurrounding a table, inveſted by ſo impenetrable a cloud of ſmoke, as put me in mind of the infernal deities at a conſultation. The chairman, who ſat in great ſtate at the upper end, perceiving a new face, took vaſt umbrage, that my friend ſhould preſume to intrude a ſtranger upon the company, without previouſly conſulting the board; but Dick ſoon found means to pacify him in that article, by obſerving, that I was but juſt come to town, and having lately met with great loſſes, he had taken the liberty to introduce me into the club, with a view of having my chagrin diſpelled by their ſagacious obſervations.

This had the deſired effect; the chairman quickly recalled his good humour, and that I might have an early ſpecimen of his underſtanding, took up a news-

paper and desired the attention of the company to the following paragraph:

'Last monday night, a master taylor 'of the parish of St. Martin in the fields, 'having some disputes with his wife, 'of a very interesting nature, snatched 'up a razor, and dismembered his or-'gans of virility, which he threw into 'the fire with great fury, accompany-'ing the action with these words; "If "thy limb offend thee, cut it off, and "throw it from thee;" to the infinite 'grief and despair of his afflicted rib, 'who fainted away three different times 'on this melancholy occasion.'

When he had read this sentence, which he did with great energy, he put on a very big look, and assured the company, that the taylor in question was certainly damned to all eternity for the commission of this heinous crime.

Upon

Upon which a fat grocer, on the other ſide of the table, took notice, that he could ſee no reaſon why any man ſhould be damn'd for fulfilling the Scripture in a literal ſenſe. 'Not 'damn'd! Sir,' ſays the chairman, 'you'll give me leave to differ from 'your opinion in that point. Yes, yes, 'he's damn'd enough I warrant you 'by this time, take my word for it. 'Do but obſerve what is written in the 'Old Teſtament; "He that is wounded "in the ſtones, or hath his private "members cut off, cannot enter into "the kingdom of God." Now we muſt 'either entertain a doubt as to the ve-'racity of theſe words, or reſt aſſured, 'that the ſoul of the unfortunate tay-'lor is in a ſtate of perdition; yea, 'even tho' his miſerable body ſhould 'out-live this accident for many years.'

'And ſo you think a body can exiſt 'without a ſoul?' cried a diſciple of St. Coſmus, ſtarting up with great agi-

lity; 'For my part, do ye ſee, I always 'was of opinion, that the ſoul of the 'man was the active principle, without 'which there could neither be geſture, 'feeling, or muſcular motion; and that 'without this influencing particle, the 'object under conſideration was no 'more — let me ſee — no more actually 'now — as a man may ſay — than ab-'ſolutely a body without a ſoul.'

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' quoth the chairman, 'it may very probably be ſo. Un-'natural crimes beget unnatural puniſh-'ments. Now that this is a moſt un-'natural crime, I will infer from the 'action itſelf. For, pray, what can be 'more unnatural than for a man to 'ſtrike at the very root of nature? 'Does he not, by ſo doing, deprive 'himſelf of nature's beſt gift? For in 'taking away thoſe parts that are na-'tural, and deſtined for the propaga-'tion of human nature in general, does 'it not follow, that what remains of

'him

'him is quite unnatural, and conſe-
'quently unfit to remain in a ſtate of
'nature for any continuance? Beſides,
'we have had inſtances before now of
'a perſon riſing from the grave, and
'pronouncing his own damnation: now,
'are we to ſuppoſe, that the ſoul of
'that man was in any other place than
'hell? and is there not a gulph fixt?
'We may as well deny the law and the
'prophets!'

'Fie upon you, Sir, fie upon you,'
ſays a diſſenting preacher of Moorfields,
'this is downright blaſphemy! I am
'aſhamed to ſee a man of your years
'with ſo little chriſtian charity. Re-
'member what is written on this oc-
'caſion: "Judge not, leſt ye be
'judged." Beſides, I will maintain, that
'the taylor could not take a more ef-
'fectual method in nature than this,
'to aſcend the manſion of the bleſſed:
'for in diſengaging his body of thoſe
'parts which are moſt prone to an

'earthly carnality, he diſencumbers him-
'ſelf of a moſt heavy load of pollution,
'and thereby wingeth his ſoul to heaven
'with the greater facility. For is it not
'expreſsly written, that "ye muſt be
"eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven?"
'Now, if there is a neceſſity for a man
'to become an eunuch, as the nature
'of theſe words imply, before he can
'enter into glory, how, pray, ſhall
'it come to paſs, that the ſame man
'muſt be damn'd for diſmembering
'himſelf?'

The chairman, who had plumed himſelf greatly on his former delivery, and little thought of ſo ſhocking a rebuff, was highly incenſed at this unexpected oppoſition, and reddening with anger, exclaimed in a high voice, 'You are a 'ſhallow-headed dotard, and it is eaſy 'to ſee you have no more brains than 'a parrot. Why, you don't compre-'hend the true meaning of the words: 'they plainly infer, do ye ſee, that your

'fat

'fat arſe muſt mortify all deſires of 'the fleſh, even till you are as dead to 'all ſenſation as a rotten herring, be-'fore you can have any pretenſions to 'paſs into reſt. For, don't the thing 'plainly ſhew, that this is the deadly 'ſin which St. Paul ſpeaks of, when he 'ſays, there is a ſin unto death? And, 'for why is it the deadly ſin? verily, 'becauſe it is a downright ſtriking at 'the image of God, by diſappointing all 'farther operations of the ſpirit, when 'a man is moved, as it were, to propa-'gate his likeneſs, and raiſe up ſeed 'unto ſalvation.'

He now thought, he had put a moſt effectual ſtop to any farther diſputes on this ſubject; but he was miſtaken: a long lank fellow, a ſon of the muſes, in a ruſty black coat, and an enormous tie-wig of a ſandy complexion, was reſolved the matter ſhould not ſtop here, till he had put in for his ſhare of the honour alſo. Accordingly he ſtood up, and

and embracing the punch-bowl with more than magnetic attraction, began thus: 'That this is not the deadly ſin 'you mention, Mr. chairman, I will 'convince you preſently; as I will up-'hold, that the ſin of Onan is the crime 'for which there can be no remiſſion. 'Now here the caſe differs widely; the 'poor taylor was led into the commiſ-'ſion of that action, which bereft him 'of his manhood, from a ſuppoſition 'that he did his duty, and by miſ-'taking the text in a literal ſenſe; 'whereas the ſin of Onan is an actual 'flying in the face of heaven againſt all 'reaſon and conviction, and he that 'is guilty of this ſin, may juſtly be ac-'cuſed of the moſt horrid of murders, 'inaſmuch as he extends his crime to 'poſterity, and may be ſaid to diſ-'people a world at every treſpaſs; ſo 'that you plainly perceive that this is 'what is hinted at by the aforeſaid 'apoſtle, when he makes mention of a 'deadly ſin; and ſurely, if oppoſing

'the

'the operations of heaven in the pro-
'duction of its creatures, wilfully, and
'with one's eyes open, is not the moſt
'heinous of all crimes, I am of opinion
'it would puzzle the whole body of
'the church, to find out a circum-
'ſtance of a blacker die.'

The diſpute being now at this criſis, and neither of the parties expreſſing the leaſt deſire to recede from their eſtabliſhed opinion, the chairman commanded ſilence, and referred the matter to the determination of a half-pay officer, who was engaged in a very earneſt diſcourſe with a tallow-chandler, about the conduct of General ———, and the ſtate of our affairs in America. The matter being thus agreed on, the ſoldier put on a very martial frown, and delivered himſelf to this purpoſe:

'You talk of damnation, Gentle-
'men, but may I be d——n'd to hell
'if I believe there is any ſuch thing as
'damna-

'damnation, in reality: it is all a 'prieſt's cooked-up ſtory, the better to 'procure their tithes and ſucking pigs, 'or elſe a deluſion of the devil.'

Here he was interrupted by one of the members, who begged to know what uſe he could make of the devil and hell, ſince he exploded the article of damnation.

'O dear Sir! of what uſe?' replied the ſoldier, 'why, a mighty ingenious 'uſe, I do aſſure you, Sir. They are 'all three of infinite ſervice in diſcourſe, 'and ſerve to fill up vacancies in it, 'that would otherwiſe be diſagree-'able: beſides, they add weight to 'an argument, and carry conviction in 'their ſound. As for example now, 'how paultry would it appear in a 'gentleman and a man of honour bare-'ly to ſay, Sir, I ſhall take care to 'obey your commands in that reſpect; 'or, Sir, I ſhall not fail to reſent this 'affront;

'affront; when he can expreſs himſelf 'in this emphatical manner: May I 'be d——n'd, Sir, if I do not acquit 'myſelf in this affair to your ſatisfac-'tion, I will by G—d! or, D—nat—n 'ſeize me, if I don't blow you to atoms 'for this indignity done to my honour. 'Now, Gentlemen, do but obſerve the 'inexpreſſible propriety of the words in 'queſtion. Here, damnation comes in 'with a grace, adds energy to the dic-'tion, and aſſures your antagoniſt in 'a ſuperlative manner, that you will 'be as good as your word. And what 'is the conſequence, do you think? 'Why, he is immediately aghaſt at your 'reſolution, ſets you down in his mind 'as a hero of the firſt claſs, and by 'getting out of the way in all haſte, 'ſaves you the trouble of running him 'through the body.

'As for my part, do you ſee, I can 'have no idea of a man being more ex-'quiſitely damn'd, than I myſelf was 'ſome

'ſome months ago. You muſt under-
'ſtand, Gentlemen, that I had an af-
'fair of the utmoſt conſequence with a
'young lady of great beauty, birth, and
'fortune, which, that we might tranſ-
'act to the beſt advantage, we retired
'to a private apartment, and were, do
'ye mind me, Gentlemen, in the midſt
'of a very intereſting correſpondence,
'when, d——n my heart, who do you
'think ruſhed in to ſpoil the ſport but a
'ſet of raſcally tipſtaves, who, it ſeems,
'had traced my footſteps thither; and
'notwithſtanding all the prayers and
'tears of the poor young lady, who
'was ready to break her heart at this
'unlucky intruſion, carried me off to
'the Marſhalſea for an action of two
'hundred pounds, at the ſuit of a mil-
'liner in Bond ſtreet. Don't you think
'this was damnation in its true and
'literal ſenſe, to be interrupted at a
'time when I was bringing matters
'to bear ſo effectually, as could not fail
'to ſecure me the good graces of the
'lady

'lady ever after? Surely it was, and 'd——n me, if you diſſent from me 'in opinion, I ſhould be glad to know 'wherein I am miſtaken.'

When he had expreſſed himſelf in this manner, he ſat down in high plumage, and left the three diſputants ſo entirely confounded at the effects of his happy eloquence, that they remained in a ſtate of ſtupid inſenſibility; 'till Mr. Baal, the Moorfield's preacher, found means to arouſe their attention a ſecond time, by obſerving, that damnation was neither more nor leſs than a total privation of the beatifick viſion, without which there could be no happineſs; and took notice, that he was ſurpriſed to hear any man, far leſs a ſoldier, indulge himſelf in language that was not only wicked, but blaſphemous.

'A very pretty obſervation this, d—n 'me,' cried the ſoldier, 'and if you

'copy

'copy Tillotſon as well, no wonder if 'you produce a good ſermon. Why, 'ar'n't thoſe my own words over again, 'clothed in another garb, and be d—n'd 'to you? For, wasn't I deprived of 'the beautiful viſion of my miſtreſs, 'ſince you muſt viſion her, by the in-'dividual arrival of theſe ſame raſcally 'bums? And as for the happineſs you 'talk of, by G—d, I can ſee no hap-'pineſs a poor fellow had to expect in 'a ſpunging-houſe, with no more than 'three half-crowns in his pocket. So 'that, Mr. Baal, you may prate of your 'ſtories of roaſting ſouls upon grid-'irons to ſome body elſe, for they won't 'take with me, d——n me.

'Nor with me neither, by the lord 'Harry,' cried the poet, dancing about the room in a tranſport of joy; 'nor 'with me neither. O heavens! what 'comfort it is for a man to be bleſſed 'with a large ſtock of brains, ſeaſoned 'by reflection, and peppered with ſa-

'gaci-

'gacity! What, becauſe the taylor 'made free with his own, and you, Mr. 'ſoldier, made free with the milliner's 'property, and were both puniſhed for 'your pains, do you pronounce theſe 'things, damnation? A very pretty ſto-'ry, indeed! when your poor coun-'try is labouring under the tyranny of 'an oppreſſive and a bloody war, to cen-'ter all your calculations, your reckon-'ings, and your obſervations within the 'narrow limits of *ſelf*. No, no, my 'friends, damnation is a much more 'ſerious affair than you are yet aware 'of; it is no leſs than a national con-'cern, I do aſſure you, Gentlemen, and 'you ought to fall down and worſhip 'my footſteps as the eaſtern magi did 'the ſtar of nativity, who thus, by the 'power of his underſtanding alone, has 'been enabled to make ſo important a 'diſcovery.'

This unfathomable harangue ſet the ears of the whole company upon the ſtretch;

ſtretch; which the poet obſerving, with infinite ſagacity went on thus:

'You muſt know,' my friends, 'that 'from this night's conference I have 'imbibed a thought to attract the at-'tention of all England: and this I 'will do moſt effectually, by publiſhing 'a poem in blank verſe, which I will 'forthwith ſet upon the ſtocks, intituled, 'Damnation upon the point of a broom-'ſtick. This glorious piece ſhall be de-'dicated to his grace the d—— of 'N——, and wherein I will make it 'plainly appear, that ſo long as Great 'Britain ſhall permit the French, in 'time of war, to carry on their com-'merce in neutral bottoms, our political 'ſpeculations in the cabinet are to none 'effect: as in the mean time our trade 'will be ruined by their privateers, 'without an opportunity to make re-'priſals; by which means the nation 'will be unable to grant the neceſſary 'ſupplies for carrying on the war with 'vigour,

'vigour, our manufactories will be un-
'derſold by the enemy at foreign mar-
'kets, and this brave people, by de-
'grees, dwindle into the enervated effe-
'minacy of the Italians. So that you ſee,
'Gentlemen, you are all out in your
'conjectures upon this ſubject: for if
'the ſure means of ruining a common-
'wealth cannot properly be called the
'damnation of that republick, I pro-
'feſs I am at a loſs how to come up
'to the true meaning of the word.'

'But why do you grace your per-
'formance with the ſubſequent phraſe
'of a broom-ſtick?' ſaid Mr. chair-
man; who began to think the glory of the whole night would be ſnatched out of his hands at laſt; 'this is a circum-
'ſtance I am of opinion you will find
'ſome difficulty to account for, and is
'a thing I can by no means com-
'prehend.'

'No,

'No, I believe not, indeed,' replied the poet, with a ſneer of inexpreſſible ſelf-conceit; 'I believe not, truly! It 'would be more than Herculean labour 'to inſtil into ſuch brains, as yours, 'comprehenſion, or invention either: 'but to a man of my exalted conceptions, nothing that can be graſped by 'thought, or taken in by the elevations 'of fancy, can be impoſſible.

'Know then, that I have taken this 'glorious alluſion from a voyage I lately made to Deptford, where I ſaw a 'number of brooms ſtuck up at the 'maſt-heads of ſeveral veſſels, which it 'ſeems denoted their going to be ſold. 'Now, Gentlemen, can there be a greater 'ſign, do ye think, that the trade of 'this kingdom is in a ſtate of damnation, than to ſee a whole fleet of our 'merchantmen put up to ſale? Don't 'it viſibly infer, that there is no good 'to be done by the way of commerce, 'and make true the ends of my excel-

'lent

'lent poem to a tittle? *Arma virumque cano* ſhall be the motto; and that 'our miniſters may improve the hint, 'and ſtrike home in the infancy of theſe 'diſorders, I will enforce my admoni-'tions by the trite quotation of Ruddi-'man, *Fronte capillata, poſt eſt occaſio 'calva.*'

This remarkable inſtance of the poet's erudition and capacity, made a very ſenſible impreſſion on moſt of the audience, and a buz of applauſe was immediately echoed round the board; which had ſo great an effect upon his ſpirits, already in a violent exaltation, that he ſkipped about the room like a madman, and applied a bottle of wine to his mouth which ſuch energy that he ſoon drained it to the bottom, and then fell down on his chair.

An univerſal ſilence now enſued, during which there was a more than ordinary ſuction of their tobacco pipes, till

till the man of war, unwilling to reſt long without bringing his own importance upon the tapis, broke out again in this manner:

'You ſaid I was a ſoldier, Mr. Par-
'ſon, and you ſaid right. I am a piece
'of a ſoldier, by G—d; but ſhould be
'aſhamed to be named of a day with
'ſome of your great ones, who reflect
'a diſhonour on the epithet. Who now
'can look back, with any degree of pa-
'tience, on that ſcandalous affair in
'America? For my part, I ſay no-
'thing, though I know what I know;
'but d——n my limbs, had ſomebody
'been truſted with the command of that
'there expedition, the thing had turned
'out otherwiſe to the glory of Old Eng-
'land, elſe my name an't Strikefire:
'that's all. What, ſuppoſe there had
'been a trifling wood or two in queſ-
'tion? Was it any more than to remove
'the obſtruction by ſetting fire to it,
'as thus?' (at the ſame time applying the

the candle to Mr. Baal's wig, which ſinged ſeveral of its curls, and occaſioned a diſagreeable vapour in the room.) 'Or,' continued this ſon of Mars, 'even 'ſetting the matter upon this footing, 'that there had been a fouty river to 'be paſſed; I'll prove by a very ſimple 'experiment, that it might eaſily have 'been made to turn out to our ad-'vantage.——Suppoſe this here ſpoon-'ful of punch, (pouring it upon the table) 'was the river Ohio in America— 'here are the French — and here are 'the Engliſh — how eaſy a matter would 'it have been to convert the courſe 'of it by a little application? Don't 'you plainly ſee, that by turning it off 'to the left, the channel is rendered 'dry, and conſequently a ſafe paſſage 'for our army, while the new-inverted 'ſtream becomes a means to diſtreſs the 'enemy by an inundation? It is only 'comparing great things with ſmall, 'and the matter is, beyond a doubt, 'proved to the ſatisfaction of every

'body.—— He that hath ears to hear, 'let him hear; and he that hath eyes 'to ſee, let him ſee, and be convinced 'to a demonſtration, that we are all 'hum-bugg'd.—— And, d——n me, 'men that are experienced in war, and 'verſed in the art military, (and I could 'name you one —— but I'll ſay no 'more) are kept under, with no other 'view, than to make room for a ſet of 'ignorant puppies, who have no pre-'tenſions to that honour, otherwiſe than 'their being the baſtards to ſome rake-'helly perſons of quality.'

'I profeſs, Sir,' ſays Mr. Cottonwick, a tallow-chandler, 'you are much in 'the right. It is now an eaſy matter 'to ſee, even with a man's eyes ſhut, 'why us citizens are loaded with freſh 'taxes every coming year — but let 'them look to it: *Non omnia poſſumus 'omnes*, is a phraſe I remember theſe 'fifty years, which is juſt as much as 'to ſay, The aſs can't bear more than

'the

'the aſs may; and aſſes they make of 'us, by the L—d, to ſet ſuch ſh—tt—n 'a—f—d boys at the head of a regi-'ment, when ſuch worthy gentlemen, 'as you, Sir, are ſtarving, as it were, 'upon half-pay.'

The ſoldier was now dividing the ſtream of punch upon the table with great facility, in order to convince Mr. Cottonwick (for whom he had conceived a peculiar regard ſince this inſtance of his approbation) how eaſy it would have been to have drowned the whole French army, by a little deviation of the Ohio from its preſent courſe; validating his aſſertions by quoting Darius, who, he obſerved, made nothing of levelling mountains, and draining rivers on a march; when an old gentleman, who had not as yet opened his mouth, took the poker from the fire, and reaching over the table, gravely applied it to the hero's fingers. Arouſed at the ſmart of this application, he ſtarted back

in great fury, and aſſuming a moſt infernal grin, exclaimed, 'Blaſt your 'eyes! what's that for?' 'Only, Sir,' replied the other, 'that, as you took 'the liberty to burn Mr. Baal's wig, by 'way of illuſtration to your example 'of removing obſtructions by fire, I 'might take the ſame freedom with 'your hand, the better to convince you, 'that in conflagrations of that nature, 'a man may perchance get a burnt 'finger.'

This ſhrewd obſervation produced an univerſal laugh at the ſoldier's expence, who was utterly diſconcerted from carrying on his plan of drowning the French, at this juncture; which the poet no ſooner perceived, who by this time had made an end of his firſt nap, than he ſnatched up the chamber-pot, and diſcharged it in his face, obſerving, that cold baths were the beſt ſpecificks in the world for the refreſhment of

of a hero overheated with burning the woods of America; and that the Roman youth always delighted in exercices of that kind, after the fatigue of a hard day's march. But finding the officer did not take this piece of ſervice ſo kindly as might have been wiſhed, he threw down his reckoning and went out of the room, the better to avoid ſome expoſtulations which the ſoldier was preparing to make on the occaſion; but not before he had in a ſort of hyſterick fit, laid hold of Mr. Baal's button, and pronounced with a loud voice,

Sun, moon, and ſtars, and ye, cœleſtial poles,
Are graves when dwindled into button-holes.

This ſecond experiment put a final ſtop to the operations of the ſoldier for that night, who ſwore moſt horribly to cut the throat of the firſt man who ſhould take ſuch indecent freedoms with his perſon for the future; and as to

that lunatick, the poet, the firſt time he ſhould lay hands upon him, he would take care to give him ſuch a drubbing as ſhould not fail to put a moſt effectual ſtop to the farther progreſs of ſuch impudence for the future.

By this time it was eleven o'clock, and I had ſome thoughts of retiring, when an old man came in puffing and blowing at a great rate; and by his extraordinary agitation ſeemed to have met with ſome very remarkable accident. When he had recovered his breath a little, he addreſſed the company as follows: 'Well! God in heaven 'deliver me from this wicked world! 'Sodom and Gomorrha were but trifles 'to what is acted every night in our 'ſtreets with impunity.—But mark the 'end of all.——Theſe wars, and ru'mours of war, will be no warning to 'this ſinful nation, 'till we experience 'the fate that threatened Nineveh, and

'the

'the wrath of the Almighty awaken us
'in an earthquake.—— If I have been
'ſtopped once this night by harlots
'between this and Ludgate, I have been
'fifty times. I wonder what the devil they
'can ſee in my face! I am ſure I don't
'dreſs gay, and as I am upwards of
'ſixty-five, can be no temptation to
'their concupiſcence: but ſo it is, that I
'can't paſs the diſtance of twenty yards
'after ſun-ſet, without being ſurrounded
'by whole legions of them. Ah! I re-
'member ſome excellent lines, wrote
'by ſome body or other, applicable to
'the preſent purpoſe, and which I ſhall
'never forget were I to live to the age
'of Methuſelah. You ſhall hear them,
'Gentlemen:

See there, fond youth, whoſe over-boiling veins,
Big with the nectar of diſtilling love,
Call loudly for enjoyment; ſhun the lure
Of yon ſepulchre painted; thoſe her cheeks,
Which proudly vie with the ſweet bluſhing roſe,

Owe not their crimſon to her healthy blood:
Nor are thoſe teeth, that with the poliſh'd white
Of ivory for maſterſhip contend,
Ought but the framings of an artiſt's hand.
That noſe is none of hers, whoſe riſing grace
Seems like a Cleopatra's, look but near,
'Tis but a cover to her fallen bridge.
Forbear to barter with her: lo! her breath,
That through the cavern of her pocky throat
Beſpeaks her fulſome purpoſe, ſmites the air
With foul contagion tainted. Wouldſt thou wiſh
To 'ſcape more curſes than Pandora's box
Pour'd on the boſom of the trembling earth?
Fly the allurements of her loath'd embrace.

'There, there's deſcription for you! 'Ought they not to be wrote in letters 'of gold? — But, odſo, Gentlemen, do 'but feel my gullet; their very breath, 'methinks, has infected me. Don't 'you plainly obſerve a large carbuncle 'gathered there, occaſioned by the kiſs 'of

'of one of them, who obliged me to 'that compliance, on pain of having 'my throat cut? I am actually a loſt 'man, and ſhall be obliged to undergo 'a courſe of phyſick, though I have 'had no communication with the ſex 'for half a century.——Woman, thy 'name is devil!'

As he ended thus, he began to ſigh and ſob moſt piteouſly. During this agitation, the drawer entered the room and deſired to know if one Mr. Teſty was in company, on which the new comer ſtarted up in great perturbation, and exclaimed, 'I am the man—Who 'has any buſineſs with me?' 'Sir,' ſays the ſervant, 'a gentleman here 'deſires to have the honour to be intro-'duced to you on a preſſing emergency.' On which the old gentleman cried out, 'If any perſon wants me, in the name 'of God let him advance; I am afraid 'of no man.' A figure now entered,

whoſe head was buried in a huge peruke; and, after half a ſcore congees, accoſted the old gentleman in theſe words:

'Your ſervant, Mr. Teſty, I am extremely ſorry I had not the happineſs to wait upon you ſooner: but really our buſineſs is ſo hurried at this time, that we are ſometimes obliged to diſappoint our friends, even in deſpite of our univerſal benevolence to mankind. You muſt know, I called at your houſe according to direction, about an hour ago, when they gave me to underſtand, that you was come here to drink punch. Now, Sir, give me leave to tell you, that this is a very wrong ſtep, conſidering the preſent ſtate of your health. The virulent particles of the infectious ſaliva will, upon the increaſed motion of your fluids, occaſioned by the drinking of that warm liquor, take that opportu-

'nity

'nity to inſinuate themſelves into the 'circulation. Your blood will become 'tainted, your bones infected, and na-'ture will not be able to ſtand the 'ſhock of a ſalivation at theſe years.'

Perceiving the old fellow confounded at this unexpected ſalutation, he went on: 'I have conſidered your caſe, Mr. 'Teſty, with great accuracy, I do aſ-'ſure you I have; and ſhall exert my 'utmoſt endeavours to rid you of this 'troubleſome affair.—Come, Sir, chear 'up, you are not the firſt old man 'that has kiſſed a girl a little unſea-'ſonably. Conſider, *humanum eſt errare*; 'and beſides, a little powdering work 'will ſet all to rights by and by.'

This laſt obſervation of powdering overſet his reaſon intirely; he began to ſtorm like a madman, and ſnatching up the bellows, he threw it at the doc-tor's head with a 'G—d d——n you, 'Sir, I'll powder you, you ſcoundrel!

'Who

'Who are you? and who ſent for you 'here? I believe I am haunted by all 'the devils in hell.'

'Pſha, pſha, Sir,' cried the doctor very gravely, 'leave off trifling.—— 'What, I ſuppoſe you are offended be- 'cauſe I have been a little too public 'in my declaration. But you ought to 'remember, Sir, that "what is tranſ- "acted in private, ſhall be openly re- "vealed on the houſe-tops." Beſides, 'here are none but ſelect friends: there- 'fore mind me. Two of theſe pills at 'night, and three in the morning will 'do the buſineſs. The malignant virus 'muſt be diſſipated, every nerve muſt be 'viſited, and nature relieved from the in- 'croachments of the poiſon, before you 'can be at liberty to indulge yourſelf in 'any thing ſtronger than water-gruel.'

The mention of water-gruel enraged him tenfold. He cried out in great bitterneſs of ſpirit, 'You, with your pills 'and

'and your ſlops, may be d—n'd; I am 'ſtronger in conſtitution than fifty of 'your young ſmock-faced puppies, and 'will ſooner die than be forced to put 'up with a potion.——But, who the 'devil are you?'

'O fie upon it, Mr. Teſty,' ſays my friend Dick, whom I now perceived was at the bottom of the farce, 'you 'are much in the wrong, I do aſſure 'you, and I beg leave to take the liber-'ty to tell you ſo.——Here you was 'complaining a little while ago of a 'carbuncle in your throat; and now 'when the doctor has been ſo good as 'to wait upon you at this unſeaſonable 'hour, you affront him, by pretending 'you have no ſuch diſorder: now, this 'is very ſillily done of you, it is in-'deed.'

At the word, carbuncle, the doctor aſſumed great ſurpriſe, and laying hands on the patient, obſerved, that if the venom

venom was got to that length, there was an immediate neceſſity for a good ſmart fumigation, in order to promote a diſcharge. So ſaying, he called up the waiter, bid him get a red-hot heater and a funnel with all expedition, and then began to lug out a huge parcel of powders, which he ranged upon the table in admirable order. All this time, the old gentleman was ſo aſtoniſhed at theſe unaccountable proceedings, that he had only power to bleſs himſelf in a multiplicity of ejaculations: but when he ſaw the red-hot iron ſet upon a footman on the table, and that the doctor, in conjunction with Dick and two others, were preparing to force the neck of the funnel down his throat, in order to begin the fumigation, he made ſuch violent efforts to be diſengaged, that he overſet the table, and pitched the flaming heater upon the legs of the man of war, who ſet up ſo tremendous a yell, that the landlord came running up ſtairs to know the reaſon of this uncommon

a diſorder; during which the old
an hobbled off in great agonies,
ttering, 'My God! theſe are
I can by no means under-
' while the ſoldier took that
nity to ſculk away, without pay-
reckoning, not a little glad to
ved his money, though at the
of a pair of burnt ſhins.

which the company broke up
time, and I retired with Dick,
gly diverted at the humours of
).

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Reſolve to viſit Tunbridge.—Set out in the ſtage-coach, and have an opportunity to obſerve the ſingular humour of one of the paſſengers. — Are attacked on the road by a couple of highwaymen, where a ſpecimen of ſea-courage is exhibited worthy the imitation of all brothers of the blade.

THIS way of ſpending my evenings afforded me matter of much ſatisfaction; but as moſt of theſe ſort of meetings were now, from the ſeaſon of the year diminiſhing apace, I ſoon found myſelf under a neceſſity to ſeek for amuſement elſewhere.

I had heard much talk, and many high encomiums on the faſhionable diverſions at Tunbridge, and from a deſire of initiating myſelf by times in all the amuſements of the polite world, I reſolved

reſolved to take a trip thither. As for the expences attending a jaunt of this nature, they gave me no ſort of uneaſineſs; I had already ſettled fifteen hundred pounds in the manner afore-mentioned, and the balance of my fortune was a fund intirely ſet apart for my pleaſures, and to ſatisfy my deſire of ſeeing the world. Upon this plan, I got myſelf in readineſs, and next morning ſet out for the wells in the Tunbridge Machine. As we went off exceeding early in the morning, moſt of my fellow-travellers were making themſelves amends by heartily ſnoring, for the little reſt they had enjoyed the preceding night, ſo that I had no opportunity to obſerve who and who were together.

We proceeded in this ſtate of ſilence for two hours, till the carriage giving a lean to one ſide, occaſioned by the wheel's getting into a deep rut, a hoarſe voice at

at my elbow broke out in theſe words: 'Yo ho, forward there, you forecaſtle 'men, why don't you hawl in the jib-'ſheet? D—n your limbs, can't you 'ſee the ſhip is all in the wind, and the 'weather-leach of the fore-ſail ſhivers! 'You ſeamen? you be d——n'd!'

To this a female voice replied, 'Lord, Mr. Stayſail, don't expoſe your-'ſelf in this manner before ſtrangers: 'we have no ſeaman here but yourſelf. 'You will diſturb the company, who 'moſt of them are aſleep, and ſeem 'very well content to truſt the manage-'ment of the coach to the driver.'

'No, d——n me, I think not,' quoth Stayſail, 'I can find eaſy enough there 'is no ſeaman here beſides myſelf, that's 'a ſure thing; but d'ye think, 'tis fit-'ting as how a veſſel of this burden 'ſhould be truſted at ſuch an offing 'without proper hands to ſtand by the 'ſails;

'ſails? I'll tell you what Beſs, the paſ-
'ſengers may ſleep on if they woul;
'they know no better: but let me
'alone to mind the helm and ſheet.
'The frigate is damnation crank, that's
'the truth on't, and that dog at the
'wheel there, inſtead of giving her a good
'weatherly helm, is always ſhoving the
'rudder down, hard a lee, d——n his
'eyes.'

At this juncture, the coach giving a violent jolt, occaſioned, I ſuppoſe, by croſſing over ſome uneven ground, the lieutenant, for ſo I ſhortly underſtood him to be, after ſeveral ejaculations of 'a d—n'd head ſea here, that dog gives 'her ſuch helliſh yaws that we ſhall cer-'tainly broach to;' put his head out of the coach-door, and harangued the driver thus: 'Hark ye, Mr. Land-lubber, 'who learnt you to ſtand by the wheel? 'you had better mind your touches, 'and keep a ſharp eye to the main-ſail;

'for

'for if you don't ſteer better, I'll bring 'your d——n'd head by the board, I 'will ſo, d——n me. Thof I an't upon 'deck, I can ſee well enough from the 'cabin-windows what a miſerable wake 'the veſſel cuts, d—n your peepers, all 'one like the figure of eight in a log-'book.'

By this time it was day-light, when the lieutenant began to take off the laſhings, as he called them, of the dead lights, that he might make an obſervation in what latitude he was; but this motion was violently oppoſed by a young fellow on the oppoſite ſeat, wrapt up in an enormous great coat, who no ſooner began to feel the encroachment of freſh air upon the relaxed pores of his body, than his teeth chattered in his head, and he underwent the influence of an univerſal ague-fit; ſo true is the obſervation of an ingenious writer, that,

"Diſ-

" Diſſolv'd in eaſe, and ſoft delights they lie,
" 'Till every ſun annoys, and every wind
" Has chilling force, and every rain offends;
" For now the frame no more is girt with
" ſtrength
" Maſculine, nor, in luſtineſs of heart,
" Laughs at the winter-ſtorm, and ſummer-
" beam,
" Superior to their rage. Enfeebling vice
" Withers each nerve, and opens ev'ry pore
" To painful feeling."

But if this action of the lieutenant's was injurious to the ſhattered remains of the beau, it was equally diſagreeable to the reſt of the company, more eſpecially to an antiquated belle, whoſe attire exhibited the picture of old age and deformity, dreſſed up in the tawdry embelliſhments of fifteen, who began to take him very roundly to taſk for diſcommoding people of faſhion by his inſolent behaviour, and who did him too much honour in coming within the circle of a coach with him; and con-

concluded her oration with giving him the title of Greenland bear.

Our hero, who juſt underſtood ſo much of her meaning as to let him know ſhe could not make uſe of that appellation, as an expreſſion of her reſpect, made anſwer, 'Why, Madam, 'to be ſure as you ſay, you are of the 'faſhion, but what kind of a faſhion I 'believe will be as puzzleſome to find 'out as the longitude. To my ſeeing, 'you look more like a Venetian galley 'double painted, than an Engliſh veſſel, 'ſquare rigged; and as to what you chat-'ter about Greenland bears, mayhap it 'would become you better to wear your 'own ſheathing, like a good honeſt 'Greenland bear, than hang out falſe 'colours by way of decoy; for any man 'may ſoon find out your trim, and 'being ſo far to the northward of the 'equinoctial of your age, will ſoon 'diſcover, you are hardly worth the 'boarding.'

This

This altercation might have been carried on a great deal farther, had not the coachman given the alarm, that two highwaymen appeared upon the heath, which ſoon put an end to their wrangling, and ſpread almoſt univerſal terror through the company.

Our lieutenant, like an experienced ſeaman, after obſerving the poſition of the enemy, who appeared about two furlongs diſtance upon a riſing ground, very deliberately ordered the coachman to keep his luff, 'till he ſhould get a little farther a-head; when being advanced to a proper ſtation, 'Now,' ſays he, 'let us hawl up our courſes, and 'lay the main-top-ſail to the maſt; we 'ſhall ſee, we ſhall ſee, what theſe py-'ratical ſons of bitches are made of 'preſently.' So ſaying, he ſeized his two piſtols and cutlas, and inviting all hands to follow his example and man the great guns, jumpt upon the ground with

with great fierceneſs, and invited the robbers to come along-ſide.

As the want of courage was never a perſonal defect of mine, I followed him, which the brave tar perceiving, commended me vaſtly, and invited a fellow in livery, who was mounted behind, to join us, but he thought proper to excuſe himſelf, by obſerving, that fighting was none of his occupation; that he was not hired to fire piſtols, but to dreſs wigs, to air ſhirts, and introduce a girl in the dark genteely; and that he was more uſed to the perfume of muſk and pomatum, than the ſtinking effluvia of gun-powder, to which he had all his days bore a moſt ſingular averſion. The beau pleaded much the ſame antipathy to the compound of nitre, as his footman; ſo that we were left to defend ourſelves the beſt way we could.

However, the highwaymen ſeeing us ſo well prepared for them, thought pro-

pe-

per to ſheer off for that time; on which we re-aſſumed our ſeats, not a little glad of having got rid of ſuch unwelcome gueſts at the expence of a little well-timed bravery.

CHAP. III.

Wherein the characters of my fellow-travellers are farther diſplayed.

AS during ſome occaſional diſcourſe that happened after our late adventure, I underſtood that my fellow-paſſenger the beau, who I ſoon found was a lawyer, had paſſed the preceding ſummer at the place we were bound to, I thought the acquaintance of ſuch a perſon would be extremely uſeful in letting me into the hiſtory and cuſtoms of the place. Accordingly I made ſome advances towards an intimacy, and ſucceeded ſo well, that, by

the time we reached the town, we were upon an extreme good footing together, and agreed to lodge both in the ſame houſe, for the better improvement of our acquaintance. It is very probable, the adventure of the robbers contributed not a little to the bringing this about with the greater facility; for whether he was really aſhamed of his own cowardly behaviour, and afraid I ſhould expoſe him; or my carriage on that occaſion had enhanced me in his opinion, is uncertain; but, to uſe a very common phraſe, he met me half way, and even endeavoured to apologize for his inactivity, by laying the blame upon a d—n'd cold he had contracted the winter before, at lady Betty Quadril's rout, which he obſerved, by his neglecting to fee council time enough, had degenerated into a rheumatiſm, and alſo threatened his lungs with a proſecution, and that after ſeveral fruitleſs attempts towards making an ejectment of the diſtemper, he had been adviſed by the faculty

faculty to try air and exerciſe, in conſequence of which he was then actually removing himſelf by habeas corpus to Tunbridge, where he was in good hopes of nonſuiting his adverſary before the next ſeſſions of parliament.

The lieutenant, who was a wag in his way, adviſed him, with an arch-grin, to get along-ſide of the enemy firſt, yard-arm, and yard-arm, and endeavour to rake him fore and aft: in which caſe he took notice, that ſome of doctor Rock's ſingle pounders would do great execution; and an old woman, who ſat on the oppoſite ſeat of the coach, told him, that there was more efficacy in aſſes milk than in all the phyſick in the world.

Innocent as this obſervation might appear, yet there was ſomething in it which greatly offended the nice ears of the good lady who had at firſt called our ſea-officer a Greenland bear. She

wondered, ſhe ſaid, that a perſon of her age could be ſo indelicate as to even hint ſuch a thing — that the mentioning aſſes milk, carried along with it a very impure idea, even no leſs than that the young gentleman had been naughty with the wenches, to need ſuch reſtoratives at his age. Then ſurveying the young woman, who adhered to the ſeaman, with great contempt, took notice, it was no wonder if the conſtitutions of our youth were ruined before they were half ripe, when ſo many audacious flirts were every day ſeen gallanting it about with fellows: whereas, would they be only ſo wiſe as to attach themſelves to women of diſcretion and ſober converſation, giving her head a toſs at the ſame time, no ſuch devaſtation to their health would ever happen.

This curious harangue made me laugh exceedingly, and I could not help admiring the nice penetration of the ſpeaker,

ſpeaker, who could ſo admirably draw ſuch concluſions from the expreſſion of aſſes milk; which brought a paſſage into my mind that I have ſomewhere read, concerning the delicacy of an old maid, who was ſo extremely modeſt, that ſhe could not even hear the mention of the word ſtone, though even in compound, ſuch as free-ſtone, fire-ſtone, &c. without being very ſenſibly affected. But the neceſſary occupation of a mantua-maker, taylor, or milliner, could not be uttered in her preſence without being attended by ſtill more alarming ſymptoms; for if at any time a thoughtleſs waiting-maid was ſo imprudent as to expreſs herſelf in this manner: 'La, Ma'am, a ſmall rent 'in your ladyſhip's ruffle wants to be 'new ſtitch'd;' the effect of theſe tremendous words were inſtantaneous; down fell the lady in a terrible fit, the poor maid was ſure to be diſcharged, and nothing but confuſion and diſmay was to be ſeen in every quarter.

But to return.—This reproof ſeemed not to be loſt upon either of the parties to whom it was addreſſed: the old woman began to growl a little on the occaſion; and the officer's companion, who appeared to be well verſed in the language of Covent-garden, was proceeding to make repriſals, when a very curious ſcene of altercation was put a ſtop to, by our coach, that inſtant, driving into the inn-yard. However, the lieutenant found means to addreſs her in the name of the reſt thus: 'Well behaved, old Beachy, well be-'hav'd and ſtrong! You got a good 'breadth of beam a midſhip's, and car-'ries a taught ſail, I warrant ye; but 'clap you once upon a wind in a 'ſmart ſea-way, if you don't wriggle 'your ſtern like any Foulkſtone-cutter, 'I'll be d——n'd; and ſo good bye 'to ye.'

As he finiſhed theſe words, the carriage ſtopt, and we were preparing to deſcend

deſcend from our leathern convenience, when a tawdry young fellow approached the coach-door, and in an Iriſh accent inquired if one Mrs. Afterday was among the paſſengers: 'For if ſhe iſh 'not,' ſays he, 'I muſt be after fol-'lowing her to meet her, and if ſhe iſh 'here, I muſt e'en content myſelf in 'her abſhence, to ſtay till ſhe comes.'

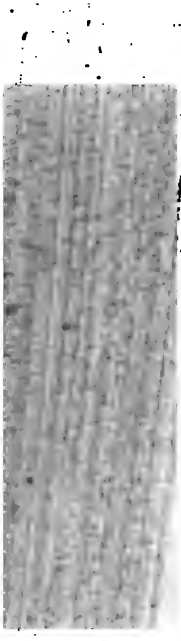
The old lady, whoſe contenance exhibited no very pleaſing aſpect at the officer's late ſarcaſm, no ſooner perceived this welcome viſiter than the contraction of her features relaxed apace, and ſhe cried out with an air of great exultation, 'My dear O'Shannon, who 'could ever have expected to ſee you 'here? Well, though this is the very 'ſupreme quinteſſence of politeneſs, and 'evidently diſplays your attachment and 'taſte (here ſhe bridled up exceedingly, and beheld the young female with a look of great ſuperiority) yet I ſhall 'poſitively never pardon this infringe-

'ment of my abſolute commands, un—
'leſs you immediately deliver me from
'this ſea-calf, monſter, devil, who has
'inſulted me to the laſt degree of ſu-
'perlative ſcurrility, during my impri-
'ſonment in the dirty ſtage.

The lover, whoſe hopes of finding her had been tinctured with ſome degree of uncertainty, ſeeing his deſire ſo agreeably gratified, could not contain his tranſport, which immediately broke out with, 'Arrah now, are you after 'being there, my dear honey? Criſt 'bleſs your own ſhweet faſhe, for telling 'me ſho. But what iſh that you ſhay? 'Has any man preſhum'd to be unſhi-'villy rude to your ladyſhip, madam? 'It's well for the villain that I am here, 'and waſh not abſhent at the time. By 'J——s, I'll ſhoon pink hiſh ſhoul's 'body to your heart's diſhcontent, faith 'will I.' So ſaying, he advanced furiouſly towards the lieutenant, when a very conſiderable check was given to his

his courage, by obſerving the muzzle of a blunderbuſs pointed from the coach-window, while his antagoniſt addreſſed him thus: 'Harkee, Mr. 'Bogtrotter, ſtand to the leeward there! 'I ſay, ſtand to the leeward! If you 'launch one inch farther a-head, I'll 'ſtow in your bow-ports, I woul ſo; 'I'll ſend you to the bottom, all one 'as a ſcuttled galley, d—n my mizen. 'So I wou'd adviſe you to brace about 'and fill. The prize you cruiſe for 'isn't aboard her, unleſs mayhap this 'crazy hulk be ſhe, who is little better 'as old lumber, and only fitting to be 'hove along-ſide, to bate ſuch Iriſh 'ſharks as you are.'

Theſe mortifying words, and the geſtures that accompanied them, effectually finiſhed what the blunderbuſs had begun. The prudent lover, after exclaiming, 'Faith and troth, Madam, 'your ladyſhip iſh in the right of it—



and disappea
his mistress t
as well as she
took this opp
smartly on th
tachment of h
observing, his
was no less ad
readily convert
man barber in
embroidered be
ther would it b
prise, if so de
should whirl him
though at the e
ladyship upon the

Whether the

terwit and myſelf retired to our apartment, in order to conſult upon the operations of the next day, which now wholly engroſſed our attention.

CHAP. IV.

Viſit the wells.—Some account of that place, and the company that frequent it.—Am introduced to ſeveral of the lawyer's acquaintance.—Viſit the walks, the ſhops, and coffee-houſes.—Engage at billiards, and come off a winner.—Take lodgings on mount Sinai.—Character of monſieur Rhubarbe our landlord, and that of his wife.

NEXT morning, accompanied by Mr. Smatterwit, I ſallied from our inn, and paid a viſit to the wells, where we found the company already employed in taking their morning-draughts,

draughts, gay as Flora, and in the moſt beautiful diſhabille. Nothing, ſure, can equal the pleaſure attending theſe ſort of excurſions. The muſick ſtriking up the moſt inchanting harmony; the ſplendid ſhops; the coffee houſes; the brilliancy of the viſitors; all together conſpire to make it a ſort of terreſtrial paradiſe.

We next adjourned to a coffee-houſe, where we breakfaſted. Here my companion introduced me to ſeveral of his acquaintance, in the character of a young gentleman poſſeſſed of a very good eſtate in the north; a circumſtance, which, though I had never once hinted at, yet I was in no humour to contradict, as I ſaw it contributed not a little towards heightening my importance in the eyes of every one. Accordingly I found myſelf very politely received by all of them, and an appointment was made to meet the ſame evening upon the walks, in order to enjoy the diverſions of the place.

In the afternoon we reſorted to one of the bowling-greens, where we diverted ourſelves ſome time very agreeably. The night was ſpent in the ſame delightful manner as the day had been: After ſauntring from one ſhop to another upon the walks, where all the company appeared in the greateſt ſplendor, we retired to a coffee-houſe, and billiards engroſſed our whole attention till almoſt dawn of day; by which time, after ſeveral viciſſitudes of chance, I found myſelf thirty-two guineas in pocket.

This good fortune juſt upon my arrival charmed me; and I ſhould have found my ſatisfaction abſolutely complete, had I only been bleſſed with an agreeable female partner, but this was a circumſtance not ſo eaſily obtained at Tunbridge wells; where, though perhaps there is no place in England that a greater variety of genteel company are to be met with, yet, on the other hand,

hand, no where is there a greater reſerve maintained by the ladies towards a ſtranger, than here. A formal ſalutation, en paſſant, or the accidental interchange of a few compliments upon the walks, by no means can entitle a ſtranger to a nearer acquaintance; and, without a neceſſary introduction by ſome friend or intimate, it is next to impoſſible to commence any ſort of correſpondence with a lady; I mean with a lady of virtue.

As ſcandal is in no place circulated with greater eagerneſs or malignity, and where a reputation once tainted, is abſolutely irretrievable, perhaps there may be good reaſon for ſo uncommon a diſtance: yet, gaiety, politeneſs, and brilliant wit are no where to be found in greater perfection than at Tunbridge.

Like moſt other places of public reſort, it abounds with a multiplicity of characters. Here are lords, pimps, ladies,

dies, whores, highwaymen, and fortune-hunters: neither is it deficient in this laſt branch of buſineſs, even of female practitioners; ſo that it is ſometimes no uncuſtomary thing to find an adventurer in petticoats, whom you perhaps have enjoyed ſome agreeable minutes with a few months before, at a London bagnio, here ſtrutting it in the ſeaſon, with all the magnificence of a rich widow, or an opulent heireſs, untouched by man.

Some reſort to Tunbridge, merely for the ſake of amuſement, and to kill time (which otherwiſe would hang heavy on their hands) in a continual round of mirth and pleaſure. Others are attracted here by the powerful character of the mineral waters; ſo that it very often happens, that, while their influence is courted in removing the reproachful curſe of ſterility, the reputation accruing therefrom, is wholly engroſſed by a ſet of Hibernian operators, reſiding upon the ſpot, who are extremely ſerviceable

viceable on theſe occaſions, though poſſeſſed of no other qualifications to recommend them to the favour of their employers, than brawny ſhoulders, and other appendages of Herculean virility which compoſe the ingredients of a chairman or ticket porter; endowments, however deſpicable in the eyes of a fribble, or a Temple beau, yet when tinctured with a ſufficient degree of well-timed impudence, are of infinite repute in the fields of Venus, and never fail to be properly valued by thoſe experienced matrons, who are wiſe enough to prefer downright ſubſtance to mere ſhadow.

Its vicinity to London makes it frequently reſorted to by another ſpecies of viſitors; ſuch as young journeymen linen-drapers, ſecond-hand gentlemen, and attornies clerks. Theſe commonly come down on a Saturday, and diſappear on a Monday morning. Yet, inſignificant as theſe heroes may appear, if you chance to ſtep into a coffee-houſe

houſe where any of them reſort in town, your ears are immediately dunned with the noiſe of their adventures at the wells; a word which is never five minutes out of their mouths. One runs himſelf out of breath in diſplaying the amiable qualifications of a certain counteſs, whoſe dear company he had lately enjoyed very agreeably, tête-à-tête. Another produces a moſt amorous billet-doux, which he decently inſinuates is the dear hand-writing of lady dowager ———. Indeed, there is one thing which manifeſtly contradicts all they ſay, which is, that theſe ladies are exceſſively upon the reſerve in public, and even affect to be utterly ignorant of the happy men, who but a little before were ſaid to have engroſſed ſo large a portion of their favour. But if the ladies are ſo wilfully blind, theſe young heroes are much more quick-ſighted; not one of them but can ſpy conſenting love even in a diſdainful frown, and trace out the ſignal for an aſſigna-

aſſignation, through the window-curtains of a lady's bed-chamber; which extraordinary diſcernment frequently occaſions vaſt homage being paid to a non-entity, while a moſt gracious bow, accompanied with a ſmile of the utmoſt familiarity, is often directed to that quarter of the gardens, where a right honourable is ſeated; though theſe inſtances of politeneſs have the misfortune to be totally diſregarded, and for this very good reaſon, becauſe the party they were directed to, happens at that juncture to look another way.

So much for Tunbridge-wells. And if I have not been accurate enough in my deſcription, it muſt be wholly attributed to my ſhort ſtay, and too much haſte in forming a judgment from appearances, not to any backwardneſs of mine to relate the truth.

In conſequence of this general reſerve among the ladies, nothing in the world

world could have happened more lucky than my accidental rencounter with the lawyer, as by his means I had none of theſe difficulties to labour under, which a ſtranger generally meets with on his firſt appearance; and before I had been three days upon the ſpot, I found myſelf on a very good footing with ſeveral genteel families, and began to enjoy the gaiety of the place with a high reliſh.

All this while we never could find leiſure to remove from the inn; but now it was high time to provide ourſelves with proper lodgings. Accordingly my companion carried me to the houſe of monſieur Rhubarbe, a French apothecary, ſituated on mount Sinai, where he had lodged the preceding ſeaſon, with whom we were quickly furniſhed with genteel apartments.

Our landlord, whoſe accent and diction would have ſufficiently beſpoke him

him a foreigner without any other information, received us both with an extremity of politeneſs peculiar, indeed, to his native country, which, after the example of the antient patriarch, he had quitted ſome years before, with a view of ſeeking a wife and habitation among ſtrangers, actuated no doubt thereto from the old eſtabliſhed reaſon, that a prophet has ſeldom honour in his own country.

However that was, he ſeemed very well pleaſed to have us for his lodgers, and perceiving my friend to look exceeding thin upon it, accoſted him thus: 'Ha, mon very good friend, 'monſieur Smattervit, ſerviteur très-'humble; I am very glad to ſee you 'at de velle. But vat be your ma-'lady? you look exceeding pouvre in 'de complexion.—— Ha, ha! now I 'underſtan vat be de matter vid you: 'you kiſs a de lady too muſh. If you no 'ſtrike a de girl, den you no go in to 'de

s ſpecimen of mine hoſt's wit,
ı extremely entertaining to me,
/ no means reliſhed by my com-
ı, who broke off all farther con-
on on that head with him for
me, by inquiring after the health
wife; a circumſtance, it ſeems,
the poor man could not recollect
ıt a very ſenſible emotion, for he
his head with a moſt emphatick
:ation, while he replied, 'Vy,
you, monſieur Smattervit, my
be very good health, and keep
grand appetite for de beuf and
ıuttone to admiration; and vat
ıſh hettar has brought me von

This laſt piece of news was a circumſtance my friend was unacquainted with; ſo, after congratulating him on the happineſs of his having an heir to his eſtate, and to give him time to recover himſelf from the confuſion which the bare mentioning of his wife had occaſioned, we hurried away to a private raffle of a ſilver tea-kettle, where the young lady I had lately contracted an intimacy with, through his means, was a ſubſcriber, to whom I intended to preſent this coſtly toy, ſhould fortune ſo order it that I came off with the prize.

In our way thither he gave me to underſtand, that the Frenchman had been married ſome years to the daughter of a wealthy butcher in the neighbourhood, though as diametrically oppoſite to her loving ſpouſe, in regard to her perſon, as her intellects; for, whereas he might be ſaid to exhibit no imperfect idea of Pharaoh's lean kine, ſhe, on the other hand, communicated the picture

picture of plenty, wherever ſhe appeared, and might, with great propriety, be diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of a Wapping landlady, whoſe circumference ſhe repreſented to the extent of the phraſe.

The cauſe of this extraordinary meagerneſs in the doctor was given out by himſelf to be wholly occaſioned by his exceſſive ſtudy, being greatly addicted to the ſcience of aſtrology, as well as phyſic; but in reality was ſaid to derive its ſource from his avaritious diſpoſition, which confined him to a diet purely vegetable; while the dilution of his clay was no other than ſimple element.

CHAP. V.

An odd occurrence happens at my lodgings, which involves my landlord in a moſt ridiculous ſituation.—In conſequence of a very diſaſtrous accident, I leave the wells in diſgrace, and return to London.

ONE morning, as I was coming down ſtairs, in order to make my appearance at the wells, as uſual, I ſaw my landlord before me, wrapt up in an old night-gown, with a naked child in his arms, ſtealing haſtily towards the back-yard, and every now and then directing a wiſtful look behind him, as if fearful of being diſcovered. Perceiving, however, that I had detected him in this ſituation, he beckoned me to be ſilent, crying, 'Huſh, huſh, God 'a bleſs a you, maſter Murray, do no 'ſay von vord, elſe you vil vake my 'vife.——Come a dis vay, an you ſal 'behold

behold de fineſt operation in de varld, de beſt univerſal ſpecific in all de whole practiſe of phyſic.' So ſaying, he approached a large bathing-tub full of water, and after crying, 'Now, maſter Murray, now for de buſinneſs;' plunged the child over head and ears into it, which he repeated ſeveral times without interruption. While I was admiring this ſingular experiment, a noiſe was heard as of a perſon deſcending the ſtairs, at which the doctor ſtarted back in manifeſt confuſion, crying out, 'Foutre 'diable! as I am living ſoul, dat is 'my vife; now ve ſal have von fine 'kitel of fiſh preſently.' But before he had recovered himſelf enough to think of a retreat, his wife entered, and no ſooner perceived her darling ſon in this dripping condition, than ſhe flew at him with the utmoſt fury, ſnatched the child from his trembling arms, and with a dextrous management of her right hand, ſoon made him ſupply the child's late place, by tumbling him

head-long into the water; at the ſame time roaring, 'What, you villain kill 'my ſon? Not content to poiſon him 'with your d——n'd ſlip-ſlops, but you 'muſt drown him alſo?'

'Parbleu, madam,' replied the doctor, recovering from his watery ſituation, 'vat a you mean by this uſage? 'I no vant to kill a de boy, but to 'ſtrengten his nerve, brace his muſcle, 'an make a him ſtrong.—I have con-'ſult de ſtar, an find your ſon vil be 'von very big man, a great docteur 'and aſtrologe; but he muſt no eat 'any ting but vater-gruel an ſage-tea. 'His horoſcope is de beſt horoſcope in 'de varld. Mercury is lord of de 'aſcendant, an in dis geniture, Saturn 'fall into de ſix houſe of de Virgo; en 'fin, all the planet have von very fine 'aſpect; but he is ſickly garçon, ſo I 'give him de cold baat to make him 'von vigrous young man.'

'A

'A very fine excuſe this, truly, for murdering my child!' ſaid the wife; but you want to get rid of us both, that's it. Yes, you villain, you do; you know you do.——But pray, if cold baths have the ſtrengtening quality you would have me believe, how comes it they have had no better effect upon you, who have try'd them ſo long? you poor ſapleſs twig, you! God knows, I have found thee a weak, inſufficient animal for all your bathing, dieting, and phyſicking. But, as I ſaid before, 'tis only a pretence to get rid of us both to ſave expences, that you uſe me and my child thus; but I'll tear your eyes out, I will, ere you ſhall accompliſh your abominable ends.' She then flew at him with ſurpriſing fury, and began to buffet him ſo heartily, that I was obliged to interpoſe, and with no little difficulty prevailed upon her to retire, and ſuffer her huſband, to go up to his chamber,

to put on dry clothes, for he was dripping wet with his late immerſion: when ſhe was gone, he returned me thanks for my timely aſſiſtance, and ſhaking his head, whiſpered in my ear, 'my vife, maſter Murray, be great grand-'ſiſter to de very diable.'

This ſcene took me up ſo much time, that before I had fairly adjuſted matters between them, it was too late to go out that morning. However I conſoled myſelf for this diſappointment, by recollecting that there was to be a ball the ſame night, at which I did not fail to be preſent, and diſplayed my qualifications in dancing with ſo much addreſs to a young lady, who did me the pleaſure of accepting me for her partner in a country-dance, that I perceived I gained very faſt upon her inclinations. This diſcovery made me ſtill more in favour with myſelf, and added not a little towards heightening the good

good opinion I had already conceived of my importance. The nymph, warm with wine and exerciſe, ſeemed already melted into current love. I ſeized the critical minute before ſhe had time to relapſe into ſober thinking, and plyed my part ſo well, that we left the rooms long before the ball broke up, and retired to her lodgings, where, abſorbed in the enjoyment of ſo delicate a creature, I gave a looſe to love and tranſport, while the embraces of my lovely partner ſeemed already to advance me above the happineſs of a mortal.

In this bliſsful ſituation I fell aſleep; but my ſurpriſe was inconceivable, when I found myſelf alone in the morning without the leaſt traces of a bed-fellow. Confounded at this unexpected removal, I began to recollect ſeveral paſſages of the preceding night; and from the ſtrange vacuity of caſh that appeared in my pockets, and the abſence of my

repeater, I ſoon had reaſon to believe my loving partner was couſin-german to the Epſom lady, who had ſo ingeniouſly contributed to pillage me before. I taxed the people where ſhe lodged of being confederates, but as this could not be proved, I only expoſed myſelf by it, which filled me with ſo much vexation, that I confined myſelf to my room for ſome time.

However, as there was no help, I repaired to the walks one day with a view to diſſipate my chagrin: but here the face of things were changed. The young lady, with whom I had heretofore carried on an intimacy, now declined my advances; the real cauſe of my quitting the ball-room was already ſpread over the place; I ſaw myſelf ſcorned and laughed at, and what was worſe, my fair partner had left me ſuch convincing tokens of her profeſſion, as left me no room to doubt it could be any other than that of a common

non proſtitute. In this alarming ſituation, deſtitute of money, and deprived of health, I was fain to return again to London, where I ſoon after arrived in a ſtate of violent mortification.

CHAP. VI.

I am viſited by the ſtock-broker, who finds great fault with my method of life. — Harangues me on the advantages reſulting from a ſtrenuous application to buſineſs, and adviſes me to commence trader. — I approve of his propoſal, and ſell off my moveables, when I experience an uncommon inſtance of the roguery of man.

IT was not long after this, before my good friend Mr. ———, the ſtock-broker, paid me a viſit, whom I had not ſeen ſince my firſt arrival in town.

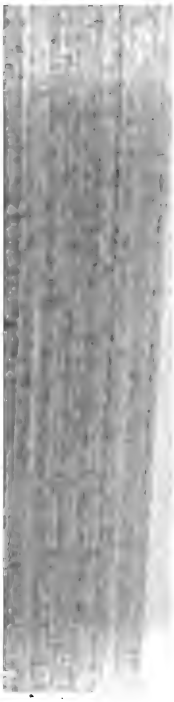
After the uſual compliments, he expreſſed his ſatisfaction at finding me in ſo flouriſhing a way of life, and congratulated me on my good fortune, in having ſo early attracted the attention of the fair, by whoſe aſſiſtance, he obſerved, I muſt certainly be enabled to go on ſo gaily; and, after ſome heſitation, aſked me how long I had been married?

I was ſurpriſed at a queſtion of this nature, and told him he was for this once miſtaken in his conjectures, for that I had never as yet ſuffered the leaſt thought of matrimony to intrude upon my mind; adding, it was time enough to think of a wife, when I had ſeen a little more of the world, and that at preſent I was diſpoſed to act the part of the bee, who pilfers ſweets from every flower, and ranges uncontrouled through the whole circle of nature's delights.

At

. intelligence, which I deli-
. a very theatrical accent, he
ged up his ſhoulders, and with
.t ſagacity obſerved, that it was a
.ry pretty amuſement, could it but
laſt, and were it attended with the real advantages of the induſtrious bee, who ſtores his own hive at the expence of the whole vegetable creation; 'but I 'fancy,' continued he, 'you differ 'widely from the bee in this particular, 'as you generally pay ſauce for the 'ſweets you mention; and after all may 'cry out with the prophet,' "Sweet in "the mouth, but bitter in the belly." He then obſerved, that, for his part, he had not only taken it for granted that I was married, but married to an heireſs of the firſt rank, by the figure I cut; and if it was otherwiſe, he ſhould look upon me in little better light than that of a madman.

Confounded at this inſinuation, I deſired to be acquainted with his reaſons



myſelf for all the
pences attending m
I ſhould ſoon find r
ceſſity of a very n
and adviſed me ſer
ſome employment, v
power, that might
tain the ſtation of
both profit and hono

'That you are
ſaid he, 'there is n
'by your launching
'bounded and uſeleſ
'then you never co
'quences; or if a th
'ture now and then p
'ſhove it aſide, and
'while you can. T
'then is plainly

'your money, comes the van of your 'ſober reflection. And give me leave 'to obſerve to you, that, although the 'gratification of thoſe appetites which 'nature has given us, is the ſole end 'of all our purſuits, yet the prudent 'man will always have it in remem-'brance, that money is the fundamen-'tal ſupport of all pleaſures, and will 'accordingly apply himſelf ſtrenuouſly 'towards its purchaſe.'

'Now,' continued he, 'what I would 'infer from all this is, that ſince your 'temper is ſo turned for the indulgence 'of pleaſure, you ſhould look out for 'ſome buſineſs, to enable you to live 'a rake with credit, and ſupply the 'demands of your appetites by a freſh 'and daily influx of caſh. For believe 'me, when I tell it you as a truth, 'that let any man, more eſpecially a 'young one, dreſs gaily, live ſplendid-'ly and magnificently, there are not 'wanting a ſet of people, that will be

'con-

'continually prying into the ſituation
'of his finances and dependance; they
'will firſt find out with great aſſiduity
'who you are, and what is your occu-
'pation: if it is hinted that you are
'a gentleman, and above minding any
'buſineſs at all, their next care is to
'ſiſthom the depth of your rent-roll,
'and if upon ſearch they ſhall find you
'deficient in this important article,
'they will immediately ſet you down
'in their mind as an extravagant young
'fellow, brimful of folly, and in the
'highway to beggary and deſtruction;
'or even if their thoughts ſhould not
'enter upon this point, they will ne-
'ceſſarily conclude, that ſuch a man is
'in no very laudable way of life, and
'not entirely ſatisfied, that he ſupports
'his extravagancies either by gratify-
'ing the fallacious demands of ſome
'wealthy old widow, or in raiſing con-
'tributions on the public by the trite
'expedient of a piſtol.'

This

This way of reaſoning had its due weight with me; and, having thanked him very heartily for ſo kind an inſtance of his attachment and regard to my intereſt, begged him to adviſe me how to proceed, as being of myſelf utterly unqualified to be a judge in theſe matters; adding, that I ſhould not fail to improve his good council to the beſt advantage; on which he went on.

'I have been conſidering,' ſaid he, of 'ſome employment that would be pro- 'per for you, and after ſome little deli- 'beration, think the trader is the moſt 'profitable, the moſt honourable, and 'the beſt adapted to your inclination 'and abilities. Trade is the grand 'bulwark and defence of theſe king- 'doms: it ſupplies us at home with 'every uſeful and ornamental manu- 'facture, and advances our reputa- 'tion abroad, more than our arms: it 'fills our ſtreets with gilded equipages,

'and

'and repleniſhes the ſhattered fortunes
'of our decayed nobility, by their tak-
'ing our daughters in marriage; ſo
'that in a few centuries, he that was
'but an inconſiderate, private man,
'will from the mighty advantages re-
'ſulting from trade, be a means of ad-
'vancing ſome of his poſterity to the
'firſt peers of the nation. I therefore
'think, by all means, that trade is the
'readieſt means to advance your fame
'and fortune; but as there are various
'branches of merchandiſe, we muſt
'conſider what is moſt proper for your
'comprehenſion and capital. —— Let
'me ſee —— What would you think of
'the linen way? I have dealt ſome years
'very ſucceſsfully in that branch, in the
'vending of Scotch cloths; ſometimes
'on my own account, and ſometimes
'in the quality of a factor for others:
'and as I have a large acquaintance
'both here and in Scotland, could be
'more able to give you my advice in
'that way than in any other. If you

'ap-

'approve of this propoſal, you may 'lodge in my houſe, the better to be 'always on occaſion near me, and alſo 'have an opportunity of converſing 'with men of buſineſs. I can, by the 'help of my friends, ſettle a correſpon-'dence betwixt you and ſome eminent 'manufacturers in the north, who can 'ſupply you with five hundred pounds 'worth of linen for a trial; and you 'can occaſionally mix in other methods 'of trade, as you find how things ſuc-'ceed, for you are to be in the whole-'ſale way. A ware-houſe, a counting-'houſe and a back parlour will be ſuf-'ficient, as you are a ſingle man; be-'ſides, there is this advantage, that no 'ſooner do you begin to make a figure 'upon change, than I can put you in 'the way to ſnap up ſome rich mer-'chant's daughter with perhaps a for-'tune of twenty or thirty thouſand 'pounds, and then you are done for to 'all intents and purpoſes.—— So, what 'do you ſay?'

'Say!

'Say! Sir,' ſaid I, 'I don't know 'what to ſay. I am in tranſports at 'your agreeable propoſal; and am only 'ready to hang myſelf that I had not 'the happineſs to know this ſooner. 'However, I'll ſet about it directly, if 'you think ſixteen hundred pounds are 'ſufficient to make a beginning.'

'Without doubt they are,' quoth he. 'Why, Sir, I'll tell you: when I 'began firſt to trade upon my own 'bottom, which was about fifteen years 'ago, I had not two hundred pounds 'in the world; and now, thank God, 'I can ſay without vanity, that I have 'paid many a time five thouſand pounds 'before breakfaſt, and yet had a ſuffi-'cient fund in bank-ſtock to ſupply 'any emergency.'

He then told me, as I had embraced the propoſal, he ſhould expect me that day at his houſe to dinner, and took his leave for that time, leaving me one of

of the happieſt young fellows in the Univerſe; as I had, by the help of a lucky imagination, which never failed me in the worſt extremity, converted myſelf into one of the directors of the bank of England, and married to a moſt beautiful young lady with half a million ſterling.

I now ſet about a thorough reformation indeed; and looking upon my fortune as infallibly made, under the direction of a man ſo thoroughly experienced in buſineſs, and whom I eſteemed as the very quinteſſence of diſintereſted honour, I began immediately to form a reſolution of ſelling off my moveables for ready money.

With this view I called up my miſtreſs, whom I had now kept for three months, and, telling her I had no farther occaſion for her, as I had happily recovered my ſenſes, and was beſides going into the country; diſcharged her from all future

future ſervice, notwithſtanding all her intreaties to the contrary. Nay, ſuch a turn of mind had my new friend given me, as to the uſe and abuſe of money, that I could not be prevailed upon to give her a ſingle guinea over what was her ſtipulated allowance.

I next ſold off my horſe for ten guineas, for which I had paid forty: but ſoon conſoled myſelf for this unconſcionable diſcount by recollecting, that theſe ten guineas would ſoon fetch ten more, which could not fail to improve the number ſoon to thirty, and the firſt lucky ſale of a few pieces of my Scotch cloth would infallibly produce the other ten, and defray all the expences of his keeping beſides.

I then went to a picture dealer, of whom I had but a little before purchaſed ſome fine Italian and Flemiſh paintings, with a deſire to take them again at a reaſonable diſcount, as I had left off houſe-keeping;

keeping; but he excuſed himſelf from this job, by obſerving, that the ſeaſon was already over, when thoſe commodities were fitteſt for market; beſides, he was obliged to go down to Wales on a preſſing emergency, and was then actually out of caſh: but adviſed me by all manner of means, to keep them till the next year, when I could not fail to ſell them all to a very good account, particularly my Cleopatra, for which I had paid him thirty guineas.

I now went to another of this honourable tribe, and offered to ſell them to him; but he told me with a ſneer, that they were all miſerable copies of ſome Engliſh practitioners, from ſecond-hand originals, and hinted, that Moorfields was the fitteſt place for them, where perhaps I might find ſome ignorant broker ſilly enough to give me five pounds for the whole.

This,

This, however, did not diſconcert me in the leaſt, as I took it to proceed from ſpleen, for having formerly refuſed to lay out money with him on ſuch another occaſion; and I determined to preſerve them all for the better decorating my new apartments. I diſpoſed of ſeveral other effects all to the ſame modeſt diſcount as my horſe: but as my trading ſcheme had elevated my mind above being chagrined at ſuch trifles, I aſſumed great chearfulneſs, and went to dine with my benefactor in a tranſport of joy.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

to dine with the ſtock-broker.—
n entertained, during this repaſt,
:h the humours of ſome of the fra-
nity: — Make a bluſtering figure
the change.—Deal largely in the
nch of inſurance.— Am waited
on by a new cuſtomer, who charms
with his eaſy and elegant po-
neſs.

WHEN I arrived at my friend's houſe, I was received with great neſs, and uſhered into a moſt ele- room, where half a dozen elderly men were already aſſembled to r. At this repaſt every thing was l upon plate, and from the vaſt es of the company, who were con- ly talking of thouſands, and ten- nds, I was actually beſide myſelf anticipation of my approaching eur. They were ſo abſorbed in the

the contemplation of their darling view, that they never once conſidered there was a ſtranger in company, and began to unfold ſuch things as made me ſtare with ſurpriſe and wonder.

One ſaid he had cleared upwards of five hundred pounds from the purchaſe of bank-ſtock, in conſequence of a lucky advertiſement he had himſelf cauſed to be inſerted in the daily papers, which had frightened an old Curmudgeon ſo much at Jonathan's, that he had ſold all out under par, and thought himſelf happy in ſo doing.

Another obſerved, that there was an abſolute neceſſity for running the B——n Eaſt-Indiaman aſhore on the cape of Good Hope, in her paſſage home, in order to bring about a ſcheme he had upon a certain moneyed perſon, who, for a certain reaſon, ſhould be nameleſs; by which ſtroke of fineſſe he

he was in hopes to clear a good round ſum.

While a third took notice, that theſe ten thouſand pound lotteries were the beſt calculated things in the world for making a man's fortune. That to his certain knowledge Aaron ———, the Jew, had gained an immenſe ſum, by retailing out ſhares of tickets that had been drawn blanks; when out of an infinite number of halfs, quarters, eighths, and ſixteenths, for which he had got a large premium, only one fifty pound prize came up, which he paid upon the inſtant with great pleaſure.

All this time I could not help obſerving the features of the company, whoſe looks were ſo haggard, that they ſeemed more like infernal harpies than men: but I ſoon accounted for this particular, in placing the diſtortion of their

their viſages to their intenſe application to buſineſs, and the care that attends the getting of money.

While I was reflecting on this circumſtance, an old fellow ſtarted up with great agility, and cried out, 'You talk 'of running the B——n Eaſt-India-'man on ſhore, Gentlemen, and it is a 'cute thought, let me tell you; but as 'you are very ſenſible of the incroach-'ments of the French upon our Ame-'rican ſettlements, ſuppoſe we ſhould 'detach a ſquadron of their men of 'war to make a deſcent upon the iſland 'of Antigua? — You underſtand me — 'Don't you think it might influence 'ſome grand movements in our fa-'vour? An advertiſement of this na-'ture conveyed to the printer of the 'Whitehall Evening Poſt, as a piece of 'very private intelligence come over 'from Holland, would not fail to take. 'I know a perſon greatly concerned

'in that iſland whom we might dupe 'on this very occaſion; and, by G—d, 'I'll put it in practice.' To this they all aſſented with great pleaſure, and ſhortly after the company broke up, with intent to meet the ſame night at Garraway's for farther conſultation. My friend now took me into his cloſet, and began thus:

'You ſee, my dear, what advantages 'reſult from a young man, like you, 'being introduced to an acquaintance 'with people of experience. Theſe 'gentlemen are all my particular 'friends; they know the world, un-'derſtand mankind, and, through a 'courſe of dear-bought knowledge, are 'enabled to ſtand upon the top of the 'wheel of fortune, and ſnatch at every 'proſpect of advantage with a ſure 'hand: there being not a man of 'them but is worth half a plumb at 'leaſt.—— Now my intention is this: 'when you find the linen buſineſs

'anſwer, you can now and then ſnap 'at a lucky brace of ſcores in the na- 'ture of inſurance: premiums now run 'high, and money will come in like 'dirt: and then as opportunities offer, 'I will let you into the nature of ſtock- 'broking, that ſo you may act in that 'branch alſo upon occaſion. You 'know, it is beſt to have two ſtrings to 'one's bow: and as to the finiſhing- 'ſtroke a wife, let me alone for that— 'I have diſpoſed of you already to the 'beſt advantage; no leſs than a twenty 'thouſand pounder I'll aſſure you, and 'the ſweeteſt creature that ever nature 'faſhioned in beauty's mould.'

I was extravagantly delighted with all he ſaid, but theſe laſt words charmed me beyond expreſſion. I fell at his feet in extaſies, embraced his knees with violent tranſport, and thanked heaven a thouſand times that had thrown me in the way of ſo worthy a man: begging, that as he had acted ſo gracious

gracious a part already in relieving me rom all dependance on my guardian, ie would continue his care in the di-ection of my future conduct, and allow ne to call him henceforth by the en-learing name of uncle. Having ſaid his, I roſe up, my eyes ſwimming in ears, and preſenting my ring which iad coſt me ten guineas, forced him, ifter a deal of perſuaſion, to accept of hat trifle as a ſmall mark of my un-ounded gratitude for ſuch exceſſive goodneſs. In a word, I was ſo taken with theſe inſtances of his attach-ment, that, as ſoon as I took my leave of him, I went into Cheapſide, and ought a very fine brilliant at twenty guineas, as a preſent to his wife, which I found means to compliment her with that very night, under the moſt ſolemn promiſe to keep it an inviolable ſecret, for ſome time, from my dear friend her huſband.

In a few days I had made ſuch quick work in diſpoſing of my moveables,

that I took poſſeſſion of my new lodgings, and began to fancy myſelf the happieſt man in England.

In a ſhort time I had a fine parcel of Scotch linens, of the beſt manufacture, placed in my warehouſe, to the value of five hundred pounds, and I began to frequent the Change with a good grace, where my kind uncle took care to furniſh me with cuſtomers enough, and in three weeks time I had diſpoſed of my whole cargo for ready money to a very good account.

This beginning charmed me; I hugged myſelf a thouſand times on my happineſs in having a friend ſo experienced as my uncle was; and acquainted him, that I intended to lay in a freſh ſtock to the extent of eight hundred pounds. He was pleaſed to commend this my reſolution, which he ſaid was very commendable in a young beginner; took notice, there was nothing like vigour in the proſecution of any one

one ſcheme, in order to bring it to bear the more effectually; and gave me a detail of my correſpondents in the north, to whom I wrote, for the firſt time, in the ſtrain of a man perfectly acquainted with the nature of buſineſs.

While I was waiting the return of my ſecond cargo, my uncle came in one day and told me, that now I had a proſpect to be employed between whiles, for that he had taken the opportunity of a ſhip that was to be inſured, to beſpeak me as one of the ſubſcribers; that ſhe was only going to Holland, and the whole ſum no more than five hundred pounds, one hundred of which I might put in for, as the other four were filled up; and that my ſhare of the premium would be all in my own pocket, there not being the leaſt riſque or danger whatſoever. I aſſented to this motion with vaſt pleaſure, and aſſigned over one hundred pounds bank-ſtock as a ſecurity, till my credit ſhould be a little more eſta-

hed, when he obſerved, there wo[illegible]uld
no occaſion for ſuch a ſtep; an[illegible] in
[illegible]onth's time I had the pleaſure to
ec[illegible]ive advice, that the veſſel was ſafely
ived in port, which relieved me from
ome anxiety on that account.

By this time my ſecond cargoe was arrived, which I diſpoſed of in like manner as the former; and now, indeed, I began to entertain very great thoughts of myſelf, and looked back with contempt on my former courſe of life, which I was fully convinced would have brought me to ruin in a ſhort time: whereas now, thought I, I am in a ſettled way, have the character of a thriving trader, and by and by ſhall experience to a reality the farther proviſes of my good friend in regard to the lady unknown.——Let me ſee.—— If this comes to bear, I will trade to the Levant, have a conſiderable correſpondence up the Straits, and be deeply engaged in our Jamaica and Virginia colo-

colonies. Spain, Holland, South-Carolina, Turky, and ſeveral other places, will open their ports to overwhelm me with their ſtores; in return for which I will ſend them ſuch commodities as ſhall not fail to clear me of three or four hundred per cent. I will then throw off buſineſs: for, why ſhould a man make a ſlave of himſelf, ſince all fleſh is graſs, and mortality but a ſpan. No, no; I am none of thoſe unconſcionable animals neither. In this caſe I will ſhew myſelf a reaſonable creature, and exhibit ſuch a piece of ſelf-denial as ſhall be worthy the imitation of the whole mercantile world. Some few hundred thouſand pounds ſhall do my buſineſs, and I will ſit down with a contented mind under all the advantages of grandeur, riches, and pomp, with the new purchaſed title of Sir Hamilton Murray, Knight and Baronet, for which I will give the trifle of a few thouſand pounds.

bliſhed, when he obſerved, there would be no occaſion for ſuch a ſtep; and in a month's time I had the pleaſure to receive advice, that the veſſel was ſafely arrived in port, which relieved me from ſome anxiety on that account.

By this time my ſecond cargoe was arrived, which I diſpoſed of in like manner as the former; and now, indeed, I began to entertain very great thoughts of myſelf, and looked back with contempt on my former courſe of life, which I was fully convinced would have brought me to ruin in a ſhort time: whereas now, thought I, I am in a ſettled way, have the character of a thriving trader, and by and by ſhall experience to a reality the farther promiſes of my good friend in regard to the lady unknown.——Let me ſee.—If this comes to bear, I will trade to the Levant, have a conſiderable correſpondence up the Straits, and be deeply engaged in our Jamaica and Virginia colo-

colonies. Spain, Holland, South-Carolina, Turky, and ſeveral other places, will open their ports to overwhelm me with their ſtores; in return for which I will ſend them ſuch commodities as ſhall not fail to clear me of three or four hundred per cent. I will then throw off buſineſs: for, why ſhould a man make a ſlave of himſelf, ſince all fleſh is graſs, and mortality but a ſpan. No, no; I am none of thoſe unconſcionable animals neither. In this caſe I will ſhew myſelf a reaſonable creature, and exhibit ſuch a piece of ſelf-denial as ſhall be worthy the imitation of the whole mercantile world. Some few hundred thouſand pounds ſhall do my buſineſs, and I will ſit down with a contented mind under all the advantages of grandeur, riches, and pomp, with the new purchaſed title of Sir Hamilton Murray, Knight and Baronet, for which I will give the trifle of a few thouſand pounds.

I had now entered into the ſpirit of [illegible] buſineſs with vigour, and had got up [illegible] ſeveral returns of linen from Scotland, [illegible] which I was hitherto ſo lucky as to ſel[illegible] for ready money, and had contracted a [illegible] number of very good acquaintances. [illegible] was well known upon Change, eſpe[illegible] cially the Scotch walk, where I cut no [illegible] inconſiderable figure; when my friend [illegible] gave me to underſtand, that unleſs I [illegible] choſe to give credit, I ſhould find my [illegible] dealings confined to a very narrow com[illegible] paſs; but by ſo doing, I could en[illegible] hance the price of my goods conſi[illegible] derably, and in caſe of an emergency, [illegible] get my bills diſcounted by any banker [illegible] in Lombard-ſtreet, who would be glad [illegible] to ſupply me on theſe occaſions, as it [illegible] was their bread. Although my mind was naturally averſe to paper-money in general, which I could never prevail upon myſelf to look upon in the light of good caſh; yet I thought his reaſons carried weight with them, and I told him, provided my cuſtomers were what

is called good men, or men of ſubſtance, I was in no mind to loſe a good offer for the trifling matter of a three months credit, or ſo. This anſwer he approved of greatly, he ſaid, and obſerved to me, that paper-credit was the great ſupport of the nation at this very juncture.

It was not long after this, that a very flaſhy young fellow came into my warehouſe, and bargained for two hundred pounds worth of very fine Scotch Hollands, which he bid me make up againſt he ſhould ſend his porter for them, and which he would ſhortly do, provided I approved of his terms. 'You 'muſt know, Sir,' ſaid he, 'that my 'name is Williams, and I have the 'honour to be acquainted with moſt 'gentlemen upon Change: but hear-'ing, Sir, of the infinite reputation 'your goods have to all others in the 'way of a foreign market, being in-'timately acquainted with your good

'friend Mr. ——, I have thought 'proper to favour you in this diſtinguiſhing manner, by purchaſing your 'linen at a ſix months credit.'

I told him, I was vaſtly indebted to him for this peculiar inſtance of his regard; that I did not at all queſtion his acquaintance with people of the firſt rank in the buſineſs; but, as he was a ſtranger to me, I ſhould be glad if he could get ſomebody whom I knew to join in the note, as I had immediate occaſion for money, and could then paſs it as current caſh.

'By all means, my dear Sir,' replied the young gentleman, with a readineſs that pleaſed me, as I was under ſome fears of having loſt his cuſtom by my propoſal; 'I approve vaſtly of your 'prudent foreſight. Such exquiſite pre-'caution in ſo young a man charms 'me, and you cannot be too much upon 'your guard in affairs of this kind: 'there

'there are numbers of ſharpers in this 'city, who make it their practice to 'enſnare the ignorant and unwary. 'But, Sir, I hope a farther acquaint-'ance with my circumſtances and cha-'racter will convince you that I am 'not of that number. In the mean 'time let the goods reſt where they 'are, and do you be ſo kind as to call 'on me to-morrow morning at my 'houſe — here is my direction — and, 'I doubt not, we ſhall tranſact this af-'fair to our mutual ſatisfaction.—— 'Sir, I wiſh you a multiplicity of hap-'pineſs, and am, Sir, your very much 'obedient.' So ſaying, he went off in great ſtate, leaving me prepoſſeſſed not a little in his favour, and in twenty minds to call him back again to take the goods on his own terms, ſo much had his ſuperabundant politeneſs gained upon me.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

According to appointment, I attend my cuſtomer at his own houſe.—Am received in a very handſome manner.—A friend of his arrives, who diſcounts my bills with great pleaſure.—He runs five hundred pounds in my debt.—Puts me off with trifling evaſions, till I experience a new ſyſtem of roguery.—My uncle turns out a moſt conſummate villain.

NEXT morning I did not fail to call at the houſe of my new cuſtomer, according to direction, and upon ſending up my name, was uſhered into a very grand parlour, where he ſoon after waited upon me in a rich brocaded night-gown and Morocco ſlippers. Notwithſtanding I had breakfaſted, he inſiſted on my drinking a diſh of chocolate with ſuch civility of argument, that I look-

I looked upon him as the beſt bred man in the Univerſe, and was about to frame ſome excuſe for my putting him to all this trouble for ſuch a trifle, but ſtill ſome freſh inſtance of his good humour and politeneſs prevented me, and I ſtood contemplating his perfections in ſilent wonder.

Having finiſhed this repaſt to our mutual ſatisfaction, he whiſpered a young lad, who immediately went out, and in a few minutes returned again, accompanied by an elderly gentleman whom my friend ſaluted in theſe words: 'Your ſervant, Mr. Moſes, I am glad 'to ſee you, and the more ſo (you muſt 'excuſe my freedom) as I ſhall have 'occaſion to infringe upon your friend-'ſhip at this juncture.'

'O, Sir,' cried the new comer, 'you 'are extremely welcome: command my 'ſervices in any reſpect, at all times and at all ſeaſons, and you ſhall find me 'ready

'ready to obey your commands on the 'leaſt emergency. If it is in the way 'of caſh, now, I can ſuit you to a 'hair, as I have been at my banker's 'for ſeven hundred pounds but this 'minute, and was on my way home, 'when your ſervant ſaid you wanted to 'ſpeak with me.'

'Indeed!' ſays my cuſtomer with an air of pleaſing aſtoniſhment, 'can it 'be poſſible? was ever any thing ſo 'lucky as this occurrence! Why, this 'is actually now the oddeſt thing in 'nature! My ſtars ſeem more than or-'dinary kind to-day: firſt, to honour 'me with the company of this young 'gentleman, for whom, you muſt know, 'Mr. Moſes, I have conceived a moſt 'ſingular eſteem; and then, to crown 'all, to ſend you in the way, at a time 'when I could hardly flatter myſelf with 'that happineſs, as Thurſday is com-'monly your buſieſt day — You muſt 'know then, my dear friend, that it

'is

'is the article of money I ſtand moſt 'in need of. I have a trifling affair 'with this young gentleman, and as 'we are as yet but ſtrangers, he wants to 'have ready money directly, which I 'greatly commend him for. Can 'you oblige me in that article? and do 'you think yourſelf ſafe enough to diſ-'count my bills?'

At this queſtion the ſtranger aſſumed a moſt paſſionate ſurpriſe, pronouncing the words "diſcount your bills!" with a ſtrong emphaſis; and, after having obſerved, that Mr. Williams's bills were as good as the bank of England, lugged out a huge leathern bag from his pocket, and demanded the ſum. 'Only two hundred pounds, Sir,' replied his friend, 'and I ſhall take care 'to return the favour moſt kindly.' On which the new comer, after ſeveral ejaculations of 'diſcount your 'bills! Mr. Williams, do I think my-'ſelf ſafe to diſcount your bills? I

'ſhou'dn't have thought of ſuch a 'queſtion as this, truly, had I thought 'till doomſday.' He then told me out the money directly, deducting bankers intereſt; and at going away, told his friend, that he ſhould actually expect his company the next week, detached from all buſineſs, to ſpend a few days with him at his ſeat near Weſt-Wycomb in Bucks, where he ſhould have occaſion for his advice in planning out ſome intereſting alterations in his wilderneſs, particularly a curious cold bath after the Roman faſhion, and a repeating ſundial upon the principles of Sir Iſaac Newton's philoſophy.

Hearing all theſe grand things, I thought I had committed a moſt unpardonable crime, to call the honour of ſo fine a gentleman in queſtion; and began to make ſome apologies accordingly, but he would not hear a word more upon that ſubject, and ſtopped me ſhort with, 'No more of that, my dear Sir, 'I do

'I do beſeech you. Why, I ſhould juſt 'have acted in the ſame manner my-'ſelf, and I approve your precaution 'greatly; it is a good ſign, and proves 'you to be a man of buſineſs. I ſhall 'ſend my porter for the goods in ſome 'five or ſix days, and do myſelf the 'honour to call upon you very ſoon.'

I now went home in great ſpirits, and finding my uncle in the way, related the tranſactions of the morning, and ſhewed him the money; at the ſight of which he teſtified much pleaſure, and obſerved there was nothing like the ready. 'But now,' ſays he, 'you need be under no farther appre-'henſions as to that quarter, for the 'gentleman really bears a very good 'character.'

In about ſix weeks I was paid another viſit from the ſame young gentleman, who very obligingly told me, that he had diſpoſed of his laſt purchaſe

to

to ſo good account, that he was reſolved to venture a ſecond time, but that they muſt come reaſonable, as he intended to lay out one hundred pounds ready money. I was very glad to hear of this piece of intelligence, and reſolving not to be out-done in generoſity, let him have that value not much above prime coſt, for which I received caſh down upon the nail. I thought now there was no farther reaſon for ſuſpicion, and accordingly told him at parting, that if at any time he ſhould have occaſion for any thing in my way, his bill was bank-ſtock, and I ſhould be extremely obliged for his favours.

In conſequence of this intimation, he ſoon after gave me to underſtand, that he had then the greateſt opportunity in the world to diſpoſe of a parcel of Scotch Hollands to the amount of five hundred pounds; but that he ſhould be obliged to let ſlip the occaſion, as he was at that juncture really out of caſh, having

having been lately put to great diſburſements in repairing a ſmall eſtate which had been left him by a relation on Blackheath. Glad of this opportunity to convince him of my ſincere dependance on his honour, I told him, he need give himſelf no farther trouble upon that ſcore, as I could juſt then ſupply him with the deſired quantity; and as to ready money, it was a matter of indifference to me, as his note was as good to me as caſh.

Abundance of compliments paſſed now on this occaſion; the epithets of honour, generoſity, diſintereſted attachment, and integrity, were bandied about like the ſhuttle of a weaver's loom, and in the end he condeſcended to honour me with this great inſtance of his eſteem, by taking to the value of five hundred pounds in the very choiceſt aſſortments I had, for which only a few lines upon paper ſigned by him, appeared ſo high an equivalent to me, that it kept my ſpirits

ſpirits in a ſtate of rapturous exaltation for three days after.

Not long after this, I happened to have a ſudden demand for ſome money, and taking my precious note in my pocket, I went to the old gentleman, who had ſo readily diſcounted my firſt note, with a deſire to favour me in the like manner a ſecond time, as it would then oblige me exceſſively. He received me with abundance of eaſy politeneſs; obſerved, he had paid away eighteen hundred pounds not three hours before, and was actually then empty-handed; but begged me to call in five days, and he ſhould then be in a condition to ſupply my occaſions. This I did not fail to do, but he was ſtill out of caſh; and in ſhort, after a whole fortnight's attendance, I found myſelf as nigh the point as ever. Our d——n'd commerce with France and Holland, he ſaid, had drained the nation ſo, that, for his part, money was ſo ſcarce, he believed

it

t had fled the kingdom: and we ight thank our vicinity to the iſle of Man as one cauſe of this unaccountable carcity of current coin; for what with he treaſonous practices of the Jews in lipping and coining, and the illicit proeedings of out-lawed ſmugglers, an Engliſh guinea would ſoon become as reat a rarity as conſtancy in a whore, r univerſal charity in a papiſt; and oncluded with telling me, he had not hen twenty pieces in his hands.

Having received this anſwer from ny gentleman of Weſt-Wycomb in conitatu Bucks, I told him, I was extremey ſorry I had given him and myſelf ſo nuch unneceſſary trouble, and took my eave, reſolving within myſelf to apply o a banker for the purpoſe, and this did regularly from one end of Lombard-ſtreet to another, but none of them knew the man. He might be a perſon of ſome conſideration, for what they knew of the matter, but in theſe caſes abſo-

abſolute certainty muſt be inſiſted on. One of their clerks in particular obſerved with a ſhrug, that he was no ſtranger to the hand-writing, but could not ſay that ever he had the honour to advance any money either to the principal, or on his account; 'though,' continued he, 'we frequently find people coming here 'with ſuch things as theſe; but the mis-'fortune of it is, the gentleman himſelf 'is hardly ever to be found beyond the 'purlieus of Fleet-ditch.'

I had nothing to do now but to attend patiently the expiration of the date, which was no ſooner come than I waited upon the gentleman in perſon, who received me in a very polite manner, and deſired me to do him the favour to call again in eight days, when he would not fail to be prepared for me. This I did not forget to do, when "call again" was ſtill the anſwer; and after three weeks dallying, I had as little appearance of being re-imburſed as ever. I acquaint-

inted my uncle with this unac-
able proceeding, who adviſed me
eſt him forthwith. But I was ex-
ly unwilling to affront a gentle-
in that manner, and withſtood his
e a whole month; when at the
f that time, not perceiving myſelf
nearer my money, I thought I
d be wanting to my own intereſt,
did not endeavour to recover my
rty at any rate, and ſo was con-
ed to take out a writ, but ac-
panied the bailiffs to prevent their
ing things to an extremity.

hen we entered the ſhop, he took
otice of my attendants, otherwiſe
by ſaluting us all three in ſo cour-
a manner, that it wrung me to
eart to be forced to put in prac-
an action that I thought quite in-
ſtent with the character of a man
onour to make uſe of towards his
d. In order to avoid this as much
ſſible, I began to expatiate on the
length

length of time his bill had remained unpaid ſince the date was expired; took notice of the infinite prejudice an omiſſion of that nature muſt be to a trading man, whoſe ſole credit depended on a quick circulation of money; and obſerved, that I was then come to demand a categorical anſwer, and in caſe of farther equivocations, to let the law take its courſe, the better to eſtabliſh my own emolument. He affected great ſurpriſe at this uſage, which he ſaid was actually very ungenteel treatment; and even aſked me in ſome heat, if I wanted him to go upon the highway for my paultry trifle; adding, I had better by half make myſelf eaſy, for that was not the way to go to work, he could aſſure me.

This manner of delivery I thought ſo unſuitable to my generous forbearance, and the preſent ſituation of affairs between us, that I took fire in my turn, and deſired the officers to do their duty;

but I was not a little confounded, when upon his producing a kind of printed certificate, they gave me to underſtand, they had nothing to do with the gentleman, as he was then within the liberties of the Fleet, and had been a priſoner in Ludgate for ſome time.

In a tranſport of raging madneſs I went home to acquaint my uncle with the particulars of this melancholy affair, who, poor gentleman, was as much dejected at it as I could be, every now and then crying out in a tone of inexpreſſible aſtoniſhment, 'Good God! 'Mr. Williams in trouble! Poor man! 'His integrity has undone him. My 'ſtars, who would have thought it!' Then lifting up his hands and eyes, 'Heavens!' ſaid he, 'if ſuch virtue, 'ſuch exalted honeſty and candour meet 'with this wayward fate, what muſt 'the generality of mankind expect in 'the long run! For my part, I begin 'to be weary of the world; and two or

'three more ſuch inſtances of this na-
'ture will make me retire from buſi-
'neſs in good earneſt.'

When he had paid this tribute of affection to the diſtreſſes of his afflicted friend, he endeavoured to reaſon me into a ſtate of reſignation to my fate, by recounting the many loſſes and croſſes he himſelf had met with in the courſe of his dealings, but obſerved, that theſe things did not always happen, as God forbid they ſhould; and there was ſtill a proſpect of a dividend. With this meagre conſolation I was obliged to be content, and by the advice of my uncle turned my mind intirely to buſineſs, with intent to remedy ſo fatal an inconvenience as ſoon as poſſible. Accordingly I dealt largely in inſurances, not only of ſhips, but alſo of private goods, and by the returns I received, and ſucceſs I met with, had no reaſon to complain that my induſtry was unrewarded.

In

In this manner I went on, when one day my uncle brought me word, that I might make a good round ſum by joining in with ſome men of eſtabliſhed credit in the inſurance of a new ſhip bound to Virginia; that my ſhare would amount to five hundred pounds; which, as there would be no preſent exaction of caſh, would be a means of putting a good ſum in my pocket; and then aſked me what I thought. I told him, that I would be wholly regulated by his advice in this, as in every other article; and gave my conſent to his propoſal with great readineſs. But lunacy itſelf cannot diſplay the ravings of my ſoul, when about a month after, he gave me to underſtand, that the ſhip had been run aſhore upon the coaſt of Ireland, and ſtove in a thouſand pieces. At this woeful intelligence the faculties of my underſtanding relaxed apace. I began to ſee ten thouſand horrible phantoms of want, ruin, beggary and deſtruction, preſent themſelves to my

gloomy imagination in alternate viciſſitudes, and all my gay deluſions of joys, honours, riches, and pomp, depart as a ſhadow, and vaniſh like ſmoke.

Upon inquiring into the particulars of this ſhipwreck, we found it but too true, tho' not without ſuſpicion of foul play in the captain, as it happened in a place quite clear of bad ground, and in a night that was none of the moſt boiſterous; but as this ſcheme had been conducted with too much policy to be in danger of a diſcovery, at leaſt for that time, we were obliged to diſburſe the whole inſurance, which amounted to a very conſiderable ſum, there being ſeveral concerned in the ſubſcription. Though I afterwards diſcovered, that the captain had effected this notable exploit, and blinded the whole crew by clapping a large piece of iron privately in the binnacle, which had drawn the compaſs many points northward of its natural poſition, by which means, while the

the ſhip's company thought they were ſteering away due weſt to clear the land's end, their true courſe, they were led up into St. George's channel, and being too thick weather to find out the plot by an obſervation, he had managed his cards ſo ſlily as to run her aſhore without endangering their lives near Wexford.

This fatal loſs determined me to lay aſide all farther traffick of any ſort in which I had been all along ſo unſucceſsful, not a little grieved, that, ſince I muſt be ruined, it had not been in my former pleaſurable way, rather than by the machinations of a ſet of men, who were a diſgrace to humanity; for that my kind, indulgent, and adopted uncle was a moſt infernal villain, I had ſoon reaſon to experience, when one day I found the following extraordinary epiſtle, which he accidentally dropt in pulling out his handkerchief, and

which I perceived he had received from my guardian's ſon in Scotland.

'DEAR SIR,

'I Am extravagantly glad to hear that 'your views, in regard to your linen-'trader Murray, have been crowned 'with the ſucceſs which ſeldom fails 'to attend any well concerted ſcheme. 'Mr. Williams acted the Fleet-merchant 'to admiration, and the article of diſ-'counting his firſt bill took effectually. 'But this laſt ſtroke to diſpoſe of the 'Charming Peggy to ſo good account 'tranſports me. She was but a rotten 'hulk at beſt; and I am rejoyced that 'the affair proceeded with ſuch excellent 'precaution. My poor father is very 'much indiſpoſed of late, and, what is 'ſomething extraordinary, begins to 'feel ſome qualms of conſcience with 'reſpect to the circumſtance in hand. 'He raves inceſſantly of accounts, ba-

'lances,

lances, and his laſt home; and if he is ſuffered to remain long in this way of thinking, I am under ſome apprehenſions he will be ſo fooliſh as to make the puppy a full reſtitution; tho' rather than he ſhould diſgrace us all by an action of that nature, I will at all events have him brought in as a lunatick, though he is my parent: however, for his own eaſe and all our quiet, I could wiſh he was well with his fathers. I am, in conjunction with your good friend Dr. R——l, endeavouring all I can to convince him, that theſe trifling ſymptoms of lowneſs are nothing elſe but the natural effects of a violent relaxation of nerves, brought on by a bodily weakneſs and infirmity. He bites at this plauſible ſtory, and I am in hopes his folly will proceed no farther. In expectation of hearing from you ſoon as being ſafely arrived the other ſide of the water, I remain

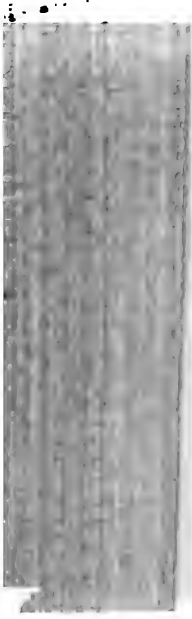
'Yours.'

At the reading this infernal letter my ſoul was ſtupified with horror. Though it was not ſigned with his name, I nevertheleſs knew it at firſt ſight to proceed from my uncle's ſon in Scotland, and the old fellow's fears of a future reckoning afforded me but a very paultry comfort, ſince, even was he diſpoſed to do me juſtice, this unnatural villain would take care to fruſtrate his intentions. I likewiſe found, to my infinite confuſion, that the ſtock-broker, and this limb of the law, had been concerned together in an old crazy ſhip which on this occaſion they had trumped up with new paintings, and an altered name, in order to inſure her at a high price, and then run her on ſhore with deſign. But what grieved me moſt of all was, that the ſtock-broker perſuaded me to make up matters with the young fellow of Fleet-ſtreet, and give him a clear diſcharge for a mere trifle, on the ſuppoſition that ſomething was better

better than nothing; and what ſignified oppreſſing a miſerable man.

I was reflecting on theſe things with grief, anger, aſtoniſhment, and deſpair, when one of the ſtock-broker's daughters, a young girl of nine years of age, came haſtily into the room, and ſnatched the letter out of my hand, which ſhe ran off with before I had time to recollect myſelf ſo far as to entertain the leaſt thought to regain it. When I had recovered myſelf from the confuſion this action had thrown me into, I eaſily conjectured, that upon miſſing it they had fallen upon this method to get it back again, for I was in too much agitation during the peruſal to obſerve who was near me.

Struck with this glaring inſtance of audacity, I ſought my infernal uncle out with great diligence, in order to come to an explanation with regard to his unprecedented behaviour; but was ſurpriſed to



covery, I new
claring his vil
was acquainted
were not ſo mu
ligence, as I ha
be, by their a
character for a
lain had been lo
his late diſappea
reaſon, having l
to be deeply con
with ſome Rotte
the northern ma

CHAP. IX.

I prevent a young woman from ſuicide.—Carry her home to my lodgings, and make an intereſting diſcovery.

IT was not long after this melancholy reduction of my fortune, when one night, pretty late, taking a turn in King's-bench walks, Middle-Temple, I ſpied a young woman a little before me, meanly habited, whom I imagined to be a girl of the town. As I had ſuffered ſufficiently by that ſpecies of women already, I was paſſing on without taking any farther notice of her, when ſhe ſtruck her breaſt in great agony, and aſſuming an accent of melancholy deſpair, pronounced theſe lines with a voice interrupted with ſobs;

" Eternity, without a ſhore,
" Where ever fiery billows roar!"

Seeing

Seeing her in this mood, I was at a loſs to diſtinguiſh, whether it was all grimace, in order to move my pity and compaſſion, a thing very frequent with girls of the town; or the reſult of thought, occaſioned by reflecting on her wicked life, and preſent miſery. But when I obſerved her to move on towards the river in the utmoſt diſtraction, I began to fancy the affair was much more ſerious than at firſt I had imagined. On this I reſolved to watch her motions, and if I found ſhe intended to make any attempt upon her life, I would then prevent her raſh deſign, endeavour to reaſon her into a more religious way of thinking, and afford her all the aſſiſtance in my power.

By this time ſhe had got up cloſe to the wall that fronts the river, which ſhe attended with extraordinary commotion, and gazing upon the moon, which then diſplayed a faint luſtre through the opening clouds, began a ſhort prayer, or

or ſoliloquy, at the end of which ſhe broke out in this manner:

" And if thou wilt, O my Creator! " graciouſly vouchſafe to lend a pity- " ing ear to the laſt prayer of a dying " ſinner, forgive, O! forgive the dear " youth that firſt ſeduced my virgin " heart to ſin, and let him never hear " of the wretched fate of his poor " Sukey, leſt his generous heart be " torn with anguiſh, and in an agony " of deſpair, he follow me to my long " home."

As ſhe ſpoke theſe laſt words, ſhe flung herſelf off the wall, and had I not on the inſtant laid hold on the back-part of her garments and ſtopped her fall, ſhe would certainly have daſhed her brains out againſt a lighter juſt underneath, which, in the agony of her ſoul, ſhe never once perceived, as alſo that it was then low water.

Having

Having effected this charitable action, I turned to her, and began to talk to her in a ſtrain, that I imagined ſuitable to the ſolemnity of the occaſion; for the thoughts that a fellow-creature ſhould be drove to that diſtreſs, as to attempt her own life, had wrought a ſtrange effect on me.

'What bold wretch art thou,' ſaid I, 'that thus dares to provoke the vengeance of an almighty and incenſed 'Being, by quitting this thy ſtation, before he, in his infinite wiſdom, has 'thought proper to call thee hence? 'Had it not been his great mercy that 'ſent me to prevent thy everlaſting 'ruin, thou hadſt perhaps, by this time, 'been beyond a mortal exiſtence, and 'experiencing, to thine eternal horror, 'what it is to commit an action, for 'which there can be no hope of pardon, as the deed itſelf exempts thee 'from all repentance. —— What! to 'preſume to ruſh into the preſence of

'the

'the Almighty with all thy ſins about 'thee, before whom the very heavens 'are not holy, and the angels them-'ſelves are unclean! God, of his infi-'nite mercy, defend us from it!'

Perceiving theſe words had their due effect, I went on: 'But come, my 'child, chear up! thou mayſt now 'ſee he has not altogether forſaken 'thee, ſince he has not permitted thee 'to accompliſh thy deteſtable purpoſe. 'Follow me! and I will endeavour to 'provide for you for the future.' She did ſo with trembling and fear, bleſſing God all the way, who had ſent me to her aſſiſtance, at a time when her better reaſon was overpowered by afflictions too hard for fleſh and blood to bear.

When I got her into my chambers, I made her drink a few glaſſes of wine, and to my great joy perceived ſhe recovered her ſpirits apace, and, ſetting aſide her preſent wretched attire and meagre

meagre looks, ſhe had ſtill the remains of a very agreeable perſon, and was withal extremely young.

As upon a little more converſation, I thought her accent bordered north of the Tweed, I took occaſion to inquire from what part of Scotland ſhe came, but ſhe had no ſooner mentioned F——r——n, than I found myſelf ſtrangely agitated.

I examined her face with the moſt eager attention; and, notwithſtanding the ſmarteſt alteration her misfortunes had occaſioned, ſoon recollected, in the perſon of my companion, the very individual features of my firſt love Sukey. At this intereſting diſcovery, my ſoul was overpowered with floods of joy and ſorrow: joy at thus unexpectedly meeting with the woman I had ſo dearly loved; and ſorrow at ſeeing her in ſuch wretched and melancholy circumſtances.

"And

" And art thou then,' ſaid I, hugging her poor afflicted breaſt to my boſom, " art thou then, my dear, my long " loſt Sukey, whoſe beauteous eyes firſt " taught me to love, whoſe endearing " converſation firſt filled my youthful " heart with rapture, who ſo often led " me on to taſte the ſweets of beauty, " and experience the joys of paradiſe ? " And can I ſee thee thus, and know " myſelf the wretched cauſe of all, " without being overwhelmed with tor- " rents of anguiſh, and filled with the " remorſe of a deteſtable murderer ? "

The poor girl, who little imagined my diſcovery of her would be accompanied with ſuch tenderneſs, was unable to conceal her emotions on this occaſion. She fell at my feet, and embracing my knees with tranſport, " For- " bear, my dear Hamilton," cried ſhe, " thus to load a wretch with your kind- " neſs, who has rendered herſelf un- " worthy of your leaſt regard : nor

" accuſe

" accuſe yourſelf of being the cauſe of " that ruin, which my own deviation " from the paths of virtue has plunged " me into.—Alas! had I nothing but " my firſt tranſgreſſion to account for, " I ſhould not deſerve this compaſſion; " in what light then can you view me, " when I muſt inform you, that your " tenderneſs is laviſhed upon a vile and " moſt forlorn proſtitute?"—Here ſhe ſtopt. Grief, ſhame and remorſe prevented farther utterance; and had not a kindly flood of tears found a paſſage at her eyes, ſhe certainly would have fainted.

Though theſe words ſhocked me greatly, yet I could not help feeling a renewal of all my former affection for her; my ſoul was melted into pity at her diſtreſsful condition, and, in the conſideration that her love to me had been the cauſe of her flying her country, and all her ſubſequent afflictions, I bleſſed the time that put it in my power to

to make her a reparation for the miſeries ſhe had undergone. Full of this pleaſing thought, I kindly wiped off the tears that copiouſly diſtilled from her ſorrowful eyes, and preſſing her to my boſom, "Have theſe lovely breaſts," cried I, "whoſe riſing dawn once "charmed my ſoul to extaſy, and theſe "delicate arms, which have many a "time encircled me in the folds of love, "become a pillow for pollution, and "as wretched incentives to aged luſt? "Shall theſe lovely hands, which I "have ſo often kiſſed with tranſport, be "longer employed in receiving the "price of proſtitution? No, my deareſt "life, my ſoul's delight, and pleaſure "of my eyes, it muſt not be. Sooner "ſhall heaven forget to reward its vo-"taries, while it crowns the wicked "with the choiceſt gifts of immorta-"lity, than my Sukey ſhall longer be "a reproach to her ſex, or a baneful "object to the ſevereſt virtue. Speak, "thou lovely partner, of my priſtine

"plea-

" pleaſures, canſt thou forgive the man
" who has been the author of this thy
" ruin, who has plunged thee into ſuch
" intolerable ſcenes of woe? and I will
" in return for ſuch unmerited good-
" neſs, make thee all the recompence
" in my power, by ſharing my perſon
" and fortune with thee to the utter-
" moſt. Yes, I am both able and
" willing to alleviate thy diſtreſs; you
" ſhall ſtill be the ſame kind, generous,
" diſintereſted girl in my eye as ever;
" and when I forget the leaſt of theſe
" my promiſes, may heaven forſake me
" as the vileſt of monſters."

Having thus given vent to the feelings of my ſoul, ſhe fell at my feet, and claſping my knees with extaſy, "O! " why will you, my dear Sir,' cried ſhe, " perſiſt to accuſe yourſelf with " being the cauſe of that diſtreſs which " my own follies have involved me? " you are extravagantly kind in thus " ſympathizing with my deplorable ſi-

" tuation:

"tuation: but if you will be ſo good as "to relieve me from this impending "ruin, and theſe ſcenes of deſtruction, "which are obnoxious to my ſoul, I "will, by my future life, endeavour to "wipe away the ſtains of my ill-ſpent "time, and by waiting upon you in the "character of a moſt lowly ſlave, make "all the recompence in my power for "this unparalleled goodneſs to the "meaneſt of wretches."

She then told me, that ſhe had no ſooner entered the room than ſhe knew me, and had taken the opportunity of my aſking her what country-woman ſhe was, to mention the very place which ſhe thought might awaken my remembrance of her, and that it was with the utmoſt joy ſhe found I did not deſpiſe or loath her upon a diſcovery.

Inexpreſſible was the pleaſure I conceived at thus meeting with the only woman

woman in the world I had ever loved; but ten times more ſo at finding her, after all ſhe had undergone, very little tainted with the vices of her accurſed profeſſion; ſo that, being of a very anticipating imagination, I began to chalk out proſpects of future happineſs in her company, the very idea of which dilated my ſoul with extaſy.

As this encounter had diſpelled all thoughts of ſleep, I begged her to relate the occurrences of her life ſince our parting, on which ſhe gave me the following account.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Story of Miſs SUKEY PATTERSON.

YOU may remember, my dear Hamilton, ſaid ſhe, that a little before you left F——r——n, one of the maids had ſomehow diſcovered our correſpondence; the quarrel you had with her that morning of your elopement, had incenſed her beyond all bounds of reſtraint, ſo that you were no ſooner miſſing, than ſhe ran to my uncle, and diſcovered her knowledge of our intimacy, taking care to interlard her narration with many aggravating circumſtances, which her own malicious fancy eaſily ſuggeſted on the occaſion. This was enough to ſet a man of his temper mad. Accordingly he was enraged beyond bounds at the bare thoughts of ſuch an indignity offered to a branch of his family; and more eſpecially when

ſhe informed him, that the late diſaſters he had met with, were owing to you, and not to ſupernatural cauſes, as he had hitherto imagined.

Incenſed beyond meaſure at this diſcovery, he flew all over the houſe with the rage of a Bedlamite in ſearch of me; and happy was it for me at that juncture, that I was not at home, but had gone over the way to farmer Johnſon's, to ſpend the evening with his daughter Polly.

It was not long before I was thoroughly acquainted with the particulars of my wretched ſituation: for my revengeful rival, for ſuch I afterwards diſcovered her to be, having found out where I was gone to, came over, and without mentioning a word of the matter, told me that my aunt wanted me immediately to make up ſome linen in all haſte againſt the next day. But I had no ſooner

ooner entered within doors, than my ıncle ſaluted me with theſe words:

'Well, my pretty little modeſty, where's your paramour? I'll warrant you'll be in a ſad taking when you hear he's gone off, and left you, for a brazen ſlut as you are, to account to the pariſh for your notable exploits. But, you ſcandalous huſſey, you ſhan't ſtay another hour under my roof: no, not if the god Plutus ſhould intercede for your reſidence, and bribe me to a compliance in a ſhower of gold. Henceforth my hoſpitable doors ſhall rather be open to the midnight-murderer, than afford a ſhelter to one who has thus meanly truckled to the laſcivious deluſions of a beardleſs boy, and made a ſacrifice of that honour to his wanton inclinations, which ought to have been the more inviolably preſerved, as you had the immenſe happineſs of being allied to the antient race of F—b—s, a family that in

'all the annals of hiſtory have never 'once been found to deviate from the 'ſtricteſt principles of virtue for a thou- 'ſand centuries. But it is now gone 'for ever, and all my future proſpects 'in regard to thee are vaniſhed. Yes, 'my reſolution is fixt as fate, and my 'purpoſe more immoveable than the 'pillars of Hercules.

'Chain'd on a barren rock, a thouſand knees
'Ten thouſand years imploring, ſhou'dn't move
'My ſteady, fixt, and unrelenting ſoul,
'To look which way you was.'

Having uttered this ſtring of incoherencies in the ſtile of an incenſed pedant, he bid me be gone inſtantly; 'For if,' ſaid he, 'another hour your 'loathed carcaſe ſhould be found to 'harbour within the portal of my gates, 'I will annihilate the nothingneſs of 'your ſoul's body, and give your pol- 'luted coarſe as a prey to the birds of 'heaven to feed on.'

The

He had no ſooner expreſſed himſelf in this extravagant manner, than he went out in great fury, and left me ſo ſhocked at his barbarous treatment, that, together with the news of your ſtill more barbarouſly leaving me, the pains of child-birth ſeized me, and his eyes and ears were ſoon ſaluted with a living teſtimony of my diſgrace and ſhame.

This unwelcome ſight overpowered his reaſon intirely: he threw himſelf about the room in the moſt frantick attitudes of lunacy; and had not my good aunt interpoſed, by repreſenting the wickedneſs of expoſing a perſon in my condition to the cold air, and the reflections that ſuch a piece of cruelty would wound his reputation in caſe of my dying abroad, he would actually have turned both me and the new-born babe out of doors, as victims to his barbarous reſentment.

After this he would never allow me to ſit with him at his table, as I had heretofore done, or even to come into his preſence; and I was no ſooner in a condition to go abroad, than he ſent me notice to prepare to make an atonement for my crimes by doing public penance at church the next Sunday in ſack-cloth, after which he would ſend me and my child both down to my friends in the north, and rid his eyes from encountering ſo horrid a monſter. But as this was a circumſtance I was by no means diſpoſed to comply with, I even reſolved to quit his houſe intirely, and truſt myſelf to the direction of Providence, rather than longer be ſubjected to the inſulting taunts of the family.

Accordingly I got myſelf in readineſs; and after taking a tender leave of my poor child, whom my aunt, from a principle of humanity, promiſed to provide for, I bundled up the few clothes

clothes and little ſtock of money I had, and ſet out the ſame night with the carrier for Edinburgh. Here I ſtayed with an acquaintance for ſome time, and made all poſſible inquiry concerning you; and after three weeks ſearch, I had the melancholy tidings that you was gone off to ſea, and would not return for a long ſeaſon. Strangely diſſpirited at this intelligence, and finding my friend's affections ſo gradually cool, in proportion as my money decreaſed, I took a reſolution, before my little all ſhould be expended, to go off to London, where I was in hopes of getting into ſome good family; and accordingly I embarked ſoon after in a ſalmon-ſloop for that capital.

We had hardly got clear of the bar, before the wind, hitherto favourable, turned quite againſt us, and after ſome days extreme hazard of all our lives, we at laſt made ſhift to get into Newcaſtle, with the loſs of what the ſailors

call the bowſprit. For my own part, during this ſcene of diſtraction, and the extreme ſickneſs I was afflicted with all the time, I verily fancied, that my folly in leaving my country, friends, and my dear child, had ſubjected the whole crew to this diſaſter; and was almoſt ready to faint at the thoughts of what might ſtill happen before we reached London.

We ſtayed eight days at Newcaſtle, in hopes of meeting with a fair wind; during which time I had the good fortune to get acquainted with a country-woman of ours, who told me that a Scotch Lord and his family were then in the town, and intended to ſet out for London in a few days in their own coaches; that one of the maid-ſervants was taken ill by the way, and ſhe would endeavour to get me into her place, if in caſe ſhe was not able to proceed with them.

I was

I was wonderfully rejoiced at theſe agreeable tidings, and begged her to intercede with ſome of the family for my admittance. And this ſhe did ſo effectually, repreſenting my youth and qualifications in the moſt prevailing manner, that the lady deſired to ſee me, and was ſo taken with me at the firſt interview, that I was forthwith hired into her ſervice, in quality of waiting-maid to the young miſs her daughter.

In a few days we ſet out on the remainder of our journey; when, inſtead of being pent up in a little paultry veſſel in the winter-ſeaſon, and tortured with a deadly ſickneſs, I had the pleaſure of riding all the way in a coach; of being provided for with a place to my heart's content; and of every day receiving freſh tokens of my good lady's favour and approbation.

Upon our arrival here in London, the family went to live in his lordſhip's

houſe in Pall-mall; and here it was I firſt began to enjoy myſelf, ſince my leaving Scotland; and had not your idea, together with that of my dear child, about whoſe health and welfare I was extremely anxious, now and then intervened to obſtruct my happineſs, I ſhould ſcarce have had a ſingle wiſh unſatisfied.

The thought of my ſon ſtill preſſing upon my mind, I reſolved to delay no longer the eager deſire I had to be ſatisfied in that particular; and accordingly I wrote a moſt moving letter to my uncle, ſetting forth my unfeigned penitence for being the occaſion of ſo much grief to ſo kind and indulgent a parent, as he had till then been towards me; my motives for leaving his family and my country, ſince I could no longer hope to find favour in his eyes; and concluded my letter by begging in the moſt pathetic expreſſions I was miſ-

treſs

treſs of, to be favoured with a line from him about the health of my dear ſon; at the ſame time informing him, that I was ſettled in the family of Lord B——n in London, and entreating him to accept the ſum of five guineas, which I had ſaved ſince I had been here, towards the expence he had been at in the maintenance of my child.

This I thought would be extremely acceptable, and pave the way to our future reconciliation; as you know, that, notwithſtanding all his pride, he is very covetous. But whether I had reaſon to flatter myſelf in my conjectures, will be ſeen by this letter which he ſent me ſoon after.

Saying this, ſhe put a letter into my hand, and I read as follows:

'POOR DELUDED GIRL,

'FOR I will not honour one who 'has ſo ſuperlatively injured me, by 'the friendly name of niece. This will 'acquaint you, that I have received yours 'laſt week, and cannot help admiring 'your audacity in addreſſing me with 'your ſcrawl, after what has happened.

'Canſt thou think, vain wretch, that 'a man of my character and func-'tion, and a F—b—s too, will ever 'deviate in the moſt minute circum-'ſtance from his priſtine reſolves? that 'he ſhould ever more favour a monſter 'with his eſteem who has by her crimes 'reduced herſelf to a level with the 'vileſt of brutes? No, ſooner ſhall the 'ſurly pilot Charon forget to waft the 'ſouls of the departed over the ſilent 'waves of the infernal river Styx, or 'the fatal ſiſters to cloſe their ſciſſars 'in dividing the ties of mortality, than

'I will

'I will ever more entertain a thought 'of recollecting ſuch a wretch but with 'the moſt abhorred ideas.

'As to the fruit of your libidinous 'ſolacings, he is now well; and I have 'begun to imbibe ſome cogitation of 'preventing, by caſtration, the extreme 'devaſtation he may, by the force of 'his titillation, commit upon the fe-'males in this nation in a few years.

'For the money you had the pre-'ſumption to ſend here, I have received 'it: but till I am fully ſatisfied upon 'what footing you may be with that 'ſame lord you mention, and whether 'it is not the price of ſin, you may be 'poſitively aſſured, that, comparatively 'ſpeaking, I am ſuperlatively fixt in 'my purpoſe, never to let the leaſt 'touch of it pollute my digitos.

'F—b—s.'

At the concluſion of this extraordinary epiſtle I was obliged to give vent to the emotions of laughter, which I had forcibly withheld during the time of my reading it; and having ſufficiently indulged myſelf therein, I entreated Sukey to proceed, and ſhe went on thus:

The contents of this ſtrange letter ſhocked me to the laſt degree; and finding I had no reaſon to flatter myſelf with any farther proſpects of a reconciliation from that quarter, I laid aſide all thoughts of ever again ſubjecting myſelf to the pride of ſo conceited and inſolent a wretch. But what gave me no little uneaſineſs was his mentioning his deteſtable deſign upon my ſon; for, knowing the temper of the man, and the turn he had at times to lunacy, I was under diſmal apprehenſions leſt he ſhould put his cruel purpoſe in practice to the utter ruin of my poor boy. Struck with this fear, I

wrote

wrote to him a ſecond time, threatening to come down and cut the throats of him and all his family, if he offered to commit ſuch a piece of barbarity; ſince which I have had little leiſure to make any more inquiries, being, as you ſhall hear, from that very time totally engroſſed with misfortunes of another kind.

I had lived in this agreeable place for the ſpace of nine months and upwards, when my lord's ſon, who had been abroad upon his travels, came home, loaded with the different vices of every nation he had paſſed through; and in return for a good conſtitution, brought back the diſmal remains of a pair of legs which reſembled more the ſpindles of a diſtaff, than the ſuporters of a north-briton; with eyes ſunk deep in his head, and a noſe that, had not the vacancy been ſupplied with the artificial work of a German, famous for his furniſhing our Engliſh gentlemen abroad with new handles to their faces, might

might have borne a pretty near reſemblance to ſuch as we ſee upon a human ſcull when it is diſrobed of the ornament of fleſh. He had, moreover, bartered his native ſincerity for the ſuperficial complaiſance of a Frenchman; his bravery and candour for the effeminacy and diſſimulation of an Italian; and the generoſity and hoſpitality of his anceſtors for the oſtentatious parade of a Spaniſh Don.

He had not been eight days in the houſe before he fixt his eyes upon me, and began to ſolicit my compliance to his will with a multiplicity of preſents, and a compliment to my beauty couched in the words of ſome foreign language which he had gleaned up in his travels, and which he affected to make uſe of on all occaſions. But I had ſuffered too much for my firſt error of that kind, to think of entering upon a ſecond ſo eaſily, and accordingly I returned his trinkets, and acquainted my lady

lady with the proceedings of her ſon. On this he quitted his advances for ſome time, and I was in hopes to reſume the happineſs of my ſituation, which his late attachment had diſconcerted, when I was confounded one night, after having gone to bed as uſual, to ſee a man ruſh from out a cloſet, and approach me with the trembling l—ſt of a ſatyr. It was not long before I perceived this object to be no other than my noble admirer, who ſeeing me ſnatch up a ſhoe in order to defend myſelf from his advances, made a full halt, and began thus:

'Why now, my dear Sukey, what is 'the meaning of all this fooliſh nicety 'at a time when we are by ourſelves, 'and out of all reach of a detection? 'Some female ſcruples I will allow in 'public, the better to keep up ap-'pearances, and enhance the value of 'the obligation; but at ſuch a time as 'this to ſtand trifling, is moſt unac-'countable—

'countable — it is abſolutely now very 'childiſh and ſilly — it is, upon my ho- 'nour. The impetuoſity of my paſſion 'is wound up to the higheſt pitch of 'expectation; and if you will kindly 'now, and without all this nonſenſical 'virtue, join in with my endeavours, 'aſſiſt my raptures, and afford a ready 'compliance to my deſires, I will in 'return compliment you with a hun- 'dred guineas to-morrow morning, and 'ſettle as much upon you annually 'ever afterwards.'

Having uttered this oration with abundance of ridiculous grimace, he approached the bed, and ſeizing me, attempted to put his deſigns in execution. On this I ſcreamed out with all my might, and at the ſame time, by an accident in the ſtruggle to prevent the effecting his abominable purpoſe, I ſtruck him ſo violent a blow over the noſe with the ſhoe I had in my hand, that, not able to ſtand ſo rude a ſhock,

the

the hinges of it quickly gave way, and it fell to the ground. Confounded at this circumſtance, and finding me reſolute to oppoſe him, he inſtantly quitted his hold, and fearing that ſome of the family might be drawn thither by my cries, quitted the room with precipitation, though not without telling me, that he wondered at my impudence in refuſing a man of his quality, and that I ſhould repent the tranſactions of that night to all eternity.

In truth, I had no great reaſon to believe he would be better than his word, and was fearful that his reſentment might lead him to get me turned out of the family, and then, thought I, what will become of ſuch a helpleſs wretch, in a ſtrange land, without money or friends?

In a few days I was too ſenſibly convinced of my fears, and alſo to what mean lengths his baſe heart was capable of

of leading him into, to accompliſh his revenge: for, knowing his mother had imbibed too good an opinion of me to diſcharge me from her ſervice for a trifling fault, he contrived, by ſome means or other, to convey privately his gold watch, and ſeveral other things of value, into the bottom of my trunk, and, declaring that ſome of the domeſticks had robbed him, propoſed to have a thorough ſearch made through all the family immediately.

Accordingly I delivered my key with the reſt of the ſervants; but how great was my conſternation, grief and ſhame, when I ſaw the very individual things that had been miſſing taken out from the bottom of my own trunk!

My lady changed colour at this ſight, and obſerved it was an inſtance of diſhoneſty which ſhe could never have expected from one who had been treated ſo kindly: but that ſhe might thank

thank her own fooliſh good-nature for taking a creature into her family of whom ſhe had no character; and then diſcharged me from her houſe, with advice to leave off theſe courſes of pilfering, leſt in the end they ſhould bring me to the gallows. It was in vain for me to endeavour to vindicate myſelf after this ſeeming inſtance of theft; for, waving her hand, ſhe bid me be gone directly, and never enter her houſe more on pain of being ſent to Newgate.

When I went down into the kitchen to take leave of my fellow-ſervants, they all ſhunned my approaches like a peſtilence; and with a ſorrowful heart I was obliged to turn out into the wide world without one friend to own me, no character to recommend me to another place, and only ſeven ſhillings and ſix pence in my pocket.

What to do now, I knew not. I took my trunk to a public-houſe in the neigh-

neighbourhood, and it was with great difficulty I prevailed upon the people to take it in; ſo much had my fellow-ſervants traduced me in ſo ſhort a time to their ſtrangers.

When I thus left the houſe it was about three o'clock, and where to get a lodging for that night I knew not. I had ſpent two hours and more in knocking out for a private room; but, who are you? where do you come from? what is your name? what do you do for your bread? were ſtill the queſtions; ſo, that not being furniſhed with a ſatisfactory anſwer in any of theſe particulars, no body would admit me into their houſes, and I was in danger of periſhing for want in the ſtreets of London.

I had wandered over great part of the town in this fruitleſs inquiry, and was returning back the way I came, in utter deſpair of having any other lodging

lodging but a watch-houſe, the very thoughts of which ſhocked my ſoul; when I found myſelf under the Piazzas of Covent-garden. I had never been in this part of the town before, and was juſt beginning to aſk a chairman if he could recommend me to a lodging for that night, when an elderly gentleman came out of a tavern hard by, and perceiving both by my dreſs and language that I was a ſtranger, came up and aſked me who I inquired for. Glad of this opportunity, I told him my whole ſtory without reſerve, and with tears in my eyes expreſſed my fears of being obliged to lie in the ſtreets all night; when, to my great amazement, he burſt into a fit of laughter, and aſked me if I thought to catch him with ſo trumped up a ſtory.

I was ſtrangely diſconcerted to find him behave in this manner, and ſaid, I would appeal to any of my late maſter's family for the truth of my aſſertions.

'Will

'Will you?' ſays he: 'if I find the 'matter is no worſe, I'll do for you, my 'girl, I promiſe you. But are you 'willing to go with me now, till I in-'quire the truth of all this? And if I 'find you are telling no ſtories, as I 'want a ſervant, I'll take you home 'directly.'

I was glad to hear of this, and teſtified my readineſs to accompany him to my lord's houſe, which I told him was in Pall-mall. 'No, hang it,' ſays he, 'it is now too late, and I will take 'your word till to-morrow: ſo come 'along with me, and I will enter you 'in my ſervice immediately.' I accorded to this with great pleaſure, ſeeing him ſuch a ſober grave looking man, and was hugging myſelf all the way on my good fortune in meeting with ſuch a compaſſionate gentleman.

When we came to his lodgings in [illegible]'s Inn, he explained the nature

of

of my buſineſs in this manner: 'You 'ſee, my girl, I have taken your word 'for every thing you have thought pro- 'per to tell me of this affair: ſo if you 'have a mind to ſtay with me, you 'muſt agree to the following particu- 'lars: firſt, you muſt be contented to 'keep within doors, to keep theſe 'chambers always clean, and wait upon 'me in the character of a complete 'laundreſs; and that you may have no 'occaſion to go out of doors, the por- 'ter of the Inn ſhall bring you every 'thing you ſhall have occaſion for 'from time to time: and in the next 'place, you are to give me your com- 'pany in the nature of a bed-fellow, 'whenever I ſhall find myſelf diſpoſed 'to deſire your compliance in that par- 'ticular. So you know my mind: 'either take theſe ten guineas, and ſtay 'where you are, or depart theſe pre- 'miſes, and better yourſelf if you can: 'though I hardly think any perſon in

'their

'their ſenſes will afford a ſhelter to a 'woman in your ſituation.'

Whether they will or not, replied I, ſtung to the quick, nothing ſhall prevail upon me to ſtay longer with a wretch capable of making ſo impudent a propoſal. So ſaying, I made the beſt of my way out of the houſe, meditating on the villainy of mankind in general, and the melancholy proſpects before me, without the leaſt hope of procuring a lodging for that night; curſing ten thouſand times our ſinful commerce at F——r——n, with the barbarity of the wretch my uncle, and the unrelenting cuſtom of the country, with regard to that crime, which in other places is rather paſſed over as the natural effect of unguarded youth.

With theſe reflections I wandered about till I got once more to Covent-garden; and ſo much had my miſeries engroſſed my mind, that I never once

conſidered who was near me, and burſt into a fit of crying; when a goodly looking gentlewoman, who had juſt paſſed me, turned back and aſked me the occaſion of my grief, and whether I ſtood in need of any aſſiſtance? This queſtion arouſed me effectually. I told her that I was in ſo great diſtreſs for want of aſſiſtance, that if ſhe or ſome compaſſionate body did not ſpeedily relieve me, I had no other proſpect but periſhing in the ſtreets, for that I was an utter ſtranger to the town, and totally deſtitute of a lodging. I found by her anſwer, that ſomething in my manner had pleaſed her; for ſhe ſaid with a ſmiling countenance, 'Come 'along with me, child, I'll provide for 'you, till ſomething better turns out. 'I cannot endure to ſee ſo pretty a girl 'as you are in ſuch circumſtances, with-'out pitying your caſe extremely. Fol-'low me.' I did ſo, with a joyful heart, bleſſing God all the way that had vouchſafed to hear my prayers, by

throwing me in the way of ſo charitable a chriſtian.

When we came to her houſe, which I ſince found to be in Southampton-ſtreet, I was introduced into a very elegant lower parlour, where ſhe gave me a glaſs of ſome rich cordial, in order to cheer up my ſpirits, and told me, if ſhe had reaſon to approve of my conduct, ſhe would ſhortly make me a preſent of ſome of her caſt-off apparel, of which ſhe had great plenty, not much the worſe for wear; for that few people laid their clothes aſide ſo ſoon as ſhe did. However, this depended upon my pleaſing her, ſhe ſaid, which if I took care to do I ſhould find her my friend.

I was left in amazement at this benevolence of hers to a poor out caſt, and was upon the point of throwing myſelf at her feet, in a flood of tears, to teſtify my unfeigned gratitude for ſuch

ſuch heavenly goodneſs, when, from the parlour-window, I ſaw a gay-dreſſed young gentleman come out of a hackney-coach, and alight at the door. My benefactor, who I perceived was greatly pleaſed at the ſight of him, ran to the door, and received him with abundance of joyful demonſtrations, after which they entered into ſome private diſcourſe in the adjoining room, and I could overhear the words, 'Green Scotch, pure 'virgin, and choice tit-bit, bandied 'about with ſurpriſing earneſtneſs.

I now began for the firſt time to open my eyes a little; and as I recollected to have heard ſtrange ſtories about the wickedneſs of London bawds, fancied I had got into the hands of one of thoſe ſort of women, and reſolved to look about me. But I did not long remain under the ſuſpence of uncertainty as to her intentions; for, after a little converſation, ſhe brought the gentleman into the room where I was, and

obſerving, ſhe would only ſtep and order tea to be got ready, went out, and I could perceive her to turn the key on the outſide.

I was very much troubled at this diſcovery; and, having my head crowded with the moſt ghaſtly images of murder and cut-throats, with a huge collection of antient ſtories of people being killed and buried in draw-wells, I got up, and throwing myſelf at the young gentleman's feet, begged him to have compaſſion on a poor young creature, who was far from home, and without a ſingle friend in England, to aſſiſt her in her extremity. Theſe words, accompanied with marks of ſorrow, which were far from being affected at the time, moved him; he deſired to know, what brought me there, if I was ſo afraid of the approaches of a man? and how long I had been acquainted with Mrs. B——n?

I then

I then related the whole ſtory of my proceedings ſince my arrival in London, and that I had never ſeen the gentlewoman he mentioned, till ſome minutes before he came into the houſe. He told me, that I had fallen into bad hands, that the woman was a bawd, who, after ſhe had made her market of me, would turn me adrift to ſeek my fortune, or perhaps arreſt me for ſome pretended debt, and clap me in a priſon; but if I pleaſed to put myſelf under his protection, he would inſtantly take me out of the houſe I was then in, and provide for me in a manner ſuitable to the good opinion he had conceived of me.

I had hardly time to return an anſwer to this propoſal, before Mrs. B——n came in, followed by a ſervant with the tea-equipage, and ſeeing no marks of diſſatisfaction in my countenance, for I aſſumed an air of tranquillity, made no queſtion but we had already come to a

good underſtanding together, and I would anſwer her purpoſe to a miracle.

Full of this thought ſhe aſſumed a moſt chearful humour, and patting me on the cheek with a fiſt that ſeemed more proper to knock down an ox than to demonſtrate her kindneſs, harangued me in this manner: 'Well, my dear, 'how d'ye like Mr. Barlow? Don't 'you think the company and converſation of ſuch a pretty gentleman is 'better than lying in the ſtreets all 'night, or being expoſed to the inſults 'of a drunken rabble? I am glad to 'find you are ſo condeſcending. I'll 'aſſure you, there is nothing got by 'waywardneſs now-a-days; and if you 'only conform to my directions, you 'ſhall have no reaſon to blame me, if 'you are not as happy as a dutcheſs 'every hour of the day; that's what 'you ſhan't. Yes, I love girls of com-'pliance as I love my eyes; and if you 'only mind your buſineſs properly, you

'ſhall

'ſhall be a made woman. I have ſome 'of the richeſt and handſomeſt gentle-'men in London come to my houſe; 'and then they are ſo generous, and ſo 'agreeable, that you will be in con-'tinual pleaſures, and have more gold 'than you will know what to do with. 'On ſuch occaſions as theſe, I am al-'ways the banker: and when there are 'any new clothes to be bought, or any 'public diverſions to go to, it is only 'aſk and ye ſhall have, knock and it 'ſhall be opened unto you.'

You are extremely obliging, Madam, ſaid I, and I return you hearty thanks for your kind intentions; but at preſent I am poſſeſſed with ſo little money, that I am under very few apprehenſions of being any ways incumbered with it, and conſequently ſhall have no uſe to employ a banker on that occaſion; and as to what you mention about your rich viſitors, I cannot ſee what buſineſs your ſer-

vant has with what company comes here, or how I can any ways be concerned in their good humour, or entitled to their generoſity.

It was eaſy to perceive, that this unexpected reply diſconcerted her extremely. She was intirely at a loſs how to ſpeak another word, as ſhe had taken it for granted that buſineſs had been done by this time; but her ſurprize was conſiderably augmented, when the young gentleman told her, ſhe had done very ill to decoy an innocent young creature into her houſe with the deceitful pretence of providing for her diſtreſſes, when her only view was to ſacrifice her youth, innocence, and beauty, to the baſe purpoſes of hire, diſeaſe, and proſtitution. Having delivered himſelf thus, he threw down half a crown for ſome wine he had ordered at his firſt coming in; and then took hold of my hand, which I readily gave him, and conducted me out of the houſe, to the infinite

infinite ſurpriſe of the bawd, and no leſs joy of myſelf, at beholding once more the open heavens, which ſoon after my entering this infernal den, I had greatly deſpaired of ever again being bleſſed with a ſight of.

Thus far, Sir, have I moſt chearfully complied with your requeſt, and related to you the moſt material circumſtances of my life from the time of your leaving my uncle's houſe; but which way ſhall I be able to proceed to a recital of thoſe which remain behind? Oh! that I could draw a veil before the black account, and hide it from the world! — but it muſt not be.

Know then, that the terrors I had lately been thrown into by that monſter of a man who took me to his lodgings in the Temple; and by that more monſter of a woman, Mrs. B—n; the diſtreſsful ſituation I was reduced to in a ſtrange country, without friends, mo-

ney, or even a probable means of procuring a ſubſiſtence for more than a few days; and the terrifying circumſtance of being taken up by the watch, together with the alluring and preſſing inſtances of the young gentleman, whom gratitude had taught me to look upon as my friend and deliverer, I yielded at laſt to his ſollicitations, and conſented to accompany him to wherever he would pleaſe to lead me. And accordingly he conducted me to a great houſe in Long-acre, which I afterwards underſtood to be a bagnio, and the next day took a very handſome firſt floor for me ready furniſhed, where I paſſed for his wife, and hired a maid-ſervant to wait upon me, and moreover made me ſo many preſents almoſt every time he came to viſit me, which was only twice a week, that I was ſoon well furniſhed with choice of good clothes, and fifty guineas in caſh.

At the end of about ſix months, to my no ſmall ſurpriſe, he diſcontinued his accuſtomed viſits, and had been abſent from me about a fortnight. I now began to be under terrible apprehenſions about his welfare; for his ſincere attachment and generoſity had intirely gained him my affections, when one morning I went to viſit a girl in Holborn, with whom I had ſome weeks before contracted an acquaintance.

It happened to be then execution-day, and as her windows fronted the ſtreet, I juſt ſtept to ſee thoſe melancholy victims to offended juſtice paſs on to their long home, when, to my eternal horror and deſpair, I obſerved, as I thought, my poor lover in the fatal cart, with two other poor creatures in the ſame diſmal circumſtances. At this woeful ſight my ſpirits ſunk almoſt to death, and uttering a loud ſcream, I ran down ſtairs like a Bedlamite, reſolving to be fully ſatisfied, whether

whether or not my ſuſpicions were well grounded.

I ſoon made my way through the crowd, and upon approaching the cart, quickly found my fears had not deceived me; for caſting his eyes on that ſide where I was, he ſaw me, and in a ſorrowful accent addreſſed me thus: 'Farewell, my dear Sukey, you muſt 'comfort yourſelf the beſt way you can 'for my loſs; and I am only ſorry, I 'have not lived long enough to ſet you 'above the ſcorn of a malicious world. 'The reaſon of my not acquainting you 'with my condition proceeded from 'motives of tenderneſs, well knowing 'your gentle nature would be too much 'ſhocked at it.—Once more farewell! Endeavour to think of me 'of a perſon you had never any con-'nections with.' So ſaying, he bent his eyes on a book he had in his hand, and I never ſaw him more; for I was ſo oppreſſed at this diſmal occurrence, that I

that my eye-ſight forſook me, and I fell down in a ſwoon.

Upon recovering my ſpirits, I found myſelf in the cuſtody of ſome peace-officers and conſtables; and when I inquired what was the matter, they told me I was a confederate with Barlow the highwayman, and I muſt give an account of myſelf before a juſtice of the peace. At theſe dreadful tidings I was ready once more to faint; but it was in vain to attempt to ſooth their ſtony hearts to compaſſion: and accordingly I was dragged before a certain juſtice, famous for his antipathy and ſympathy to girls of our profeſſion.

When we entered the room where his worſhip ſat in great ſtate, he exclaimed, 'So, huſſy, what poor fellow 'have you been ruining both in purſe 'and perſon, that I am ever to be har-'raſſed thus with your company? But 'I hope this exploit will rid the world 'of

'of ſuch a monſter, and relieve the ho-
'neſt wife from the apprehenſions of
'farther miſchief from your ſpreading
'contagion.—Speak, huſſy, what have
'you done?'

On this, one of his emiſſaries pre-
vented me from ſpeaking, by relating
my conference with Barlow, and ob-
ſerved I muſt certainly be acquainted
with all his confederates: 'For, an
'pleaſe your worſhip,' ſays he, 'I heard
'him adviſe her, not to think of mak-
'ing any more ſuch connections, and a
'good deal more to the ſame purpoſe.'
'O ho!' ſaid the juſtice, 'I find how
'the matter ſtands now.—Well, this
'is a moſt lucky diſcovery! we ſhall,
'perhaps by her means, find out his
'companions. In the mean time do
'you, Mr. Kinkenny, go and ſearch
'her lodgings, while my clerk writes
'her mittimus to Newgate. I have been
'ſo fatigued with buſineſs this whole
'morning, that I muſt defer her exa-
'mination

'mination till to-morrow.' He then adviſed me to recollect myſelf; and if, by my means, the reſt of the gang could be apprehended, I might bid fair to come off for this once, for tranſportation during life.

This laſt obſervation alarmed me greatly; I aſſumed my courage as well as poſſible, and told him, that I had done nothing to deſerve Newgate, or tranſportation either; and wondered upon what account I had been brought thither. 'You ſhall know all that to-'morrow,' replied this ſtern janiſary; 'till when, Mr. Conſtable, let her be 'committed to Clerkenwell Bridewell.'

To avoid entering too minutely into particulars, I ſhall only obſerve to you, that, after having been examined five different times (in which they could draw nothing from me, as I really was ignorant of my deceaſed lover's proceedings, having always taken him for a gentle-

gentleman of fortune) and confined ſix weeks in Bridewell, I was at laſt diſcharged with only the few clothes I had left of what had not been pawned for my maintenance during my reſidence in priſon: for, on their firſt ſearching my lodgings, they had ſecured all my money and trinkets, under pretence of ſtolen goods, ſo that I never ſaw any more of them, and was too much ſhocked at the dreadful viſage of his worſhip, to make any farther inquiries about the matter.

Thus was I deprived of a moſt agreeable companion, who, during the whole time of our being together, uſed me in the moſt generous manner imaginable; and reduced once more from a ſtate of comfortable ſufficiency, to ſuffer all the miſeries of hunger, cold, poverty, and want, with no more to begin the world anew again but eighteen pence.

I ſhould

I ſhould now have been in as bad a way as ever, had I not picked up a little more knowledge of the world than I had ſome months before: but during my reſidence with my departed lover, I had contracted ſeveral acquaintances with girls of high keeping; and finding myſelf in this diſtreſsful ſituation, I thought no time was to be loſt, till I ſhould ſettle myſelf upon a more agreeable footing. Accordingly to one of theſe I went, and, unfolding the circumſtances of my late diſaſter, ſhe recommended me to a certain worthy matron, who lent out clothes by the week, and very often by the night, to girls who were not ſufficiently furniſhed with theſe articles, upon a promiſe of being handſomely rewarded from the profits of the expedition.

Upon producing my comrade's letter, ſhe made no ſcruple to equip me to the beſt advantage, and from my untainted youth and beauty, conceived vaſt hopes of

of my ſucceſs —But, without deſcending to particulars, which would give me pain in the relating, and be ſhocking to the ears of any one, who is not a mere profligate; be it ſufficient to inform you, that I went gradually through, from one ſtage to another, of this infamous profeſſion, till my life became a burden to me, and I reſolved to extricate myſelf from ſuch ſcenes of wickedneſs as ſoon as ever I could be ſo happy to raiſe as much money as would ſerve to carry me back to Scotland.

With this view I was one night tempted to pick a gentleman's pocket of his watch and money; but being detected, I was ſent to New Priſon, and had not the gentleman been ſo compaſſionate as not to appear againſt me at the enſuing ſeſſions, I ſhould certainly have either been hanged, or tranſported, for this my firſt and laſt attempt of the kind.

How-

However, this affair put an end to my views of going home, at leaſt for one while: for, during my confinement, I had ſpent all my little money, ſo that, when I was diſcharged, mere neceſſity obliged me to engage with a noted bawd in Exeter-ſtreet, in whoſe houſe I contracted ſuch a complication of diſtempers, that my life became a burden; and, to add to my afflictions, was ſoon after turned out almoſt naked upon the wide world to ſeek my fortune, where having wandered almoſt a month, a wretched outcaſt, purſued by want, miſery, diſeaſe, and the ſtings of a guilty conſcience, I looked upon my diſſolution as the only means left to rid me of my misfortunes; and had not Providence ſent you ſo ſeaſonably to relieve me, I had certainly this very night put an end to my miſerable exiſtence by ſuicide.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

I make Sukey an honeſt woman by marriage. — Go after a place of two hundred a year, which proves a bite upon the public. — Am horribly chagrined, but relieved by a ſecond advertiſement. — Overhear a diſcourſe in a coffee-houſe, and am prevented from being taken in by a freſh diſcovery.

THE relation of theſe occurrences, at the ſame time that it ſhocked my ſoul to hear, filled my breaſt with ſympathizing ſorrow, and deep-felt anguiſh. I conſidered, that all her ſufferings and afflictions were the natural conſequences of her firſt attachment to me; and that, far from glorying in thoſe ſcenes of iniquity, in which ſhe had unhappily been engaged, I had a very alarming inſtance, that, rather than remain longer in ſuch a ſinful courſe, ſhe had even

choſe

choſe to ſacrifice her life, ſince ſhe had no farther proſpect of re-inſtating herſelf in the forſaken paths of virtue.

In conſequence of theſe reflections, I thought it my indiſpenſible duty to make her all the recompence in my power; and this I did the very next morning by marrying her. She received this token of my affection as became her; and was ſo overcome at my generoſity, that ſhe ſhed floods of tears: all which I took as the natural indications of a mind labouring under the ſenſe of unmerited obligations.

As the thoughts of our ſon now very much engroſſed our attention, I diſpatched a letter to my old ſchool-maſter, with a deſire to be informed of the child's health, and at the ſame time acquainted him with my marriage to his niece. In courſe of poſt, I received the following remarkable epiſtle:

'SIR,

'SIR,

'BUT that ſome few ſparks of grace 'ſeem ſtill to center in your al-'moſt graceleſs heart, by thus inquiring 'after the fruit of your diſgraceful com-'merce with that degenerate creature, 'whom I will no longer call my niece; 'you had never received this honour 'from me. Yet, that you may not be 'too much elevated at my extraordi-'nary condeſcenſion in placing that re-'ſpectful monoſyllable, which you find 'at the head of this epiſtle, you will 'do well to recollect, that the title of 'Sir is equally ſignificant of Sir knave, 'as Sir gentleman, the former of which 'you may very properly apply to your-'ſelf as the true indication of my pre-'ſent meaning. Knave, then, rogue, and 'villain, as you have been to me and 'mine, and degenerated as you are from 'all moral rectitude, yet, there was a 'time, when you had the happineſs to 'have the moſt ſhining examples of 'virtue

'virtue before your eyes, when a 'F—b—s regulated the ſteps of your 'youth, whoſe paths were paths of 'righteouſneſs. Yet you fell, and vil-'lanouſly rebelled againſt the hand that 'raiſed you to the moſt elevated tops of 'the flowery Parnaſſus. What then can 'you expect but, like your grand pre-'ſident Lucifer, to be plunged head-'long to the bottomleſs pit of fiery 'Phlegeton, to inhabit the caverns of 'the infernal Tartarus, and, with bale-'ful eyes, to explore the gloomy priſons 'of joy-diſpelling Acheron?

'You ſay, you are married; but can 'marriage compenſate for the eternal 'infamy you have intailed on my name 'and family? Did you not glory in your 'iniquity? and has not the flut eluded 'that wholeſome church-diſcipline en-'joined by the faithful for falling ſin-'ners, which could only have reconciled 'her to the preſbytery? What then re-

'mains

'mains but excommunication, and a 'direful looking forward to heavy 'judgment?

'As for the child you abandoned to 'my care, he may, for any thing I 'know to the contrary, be in the man-'ſions of the godly; at leaſt I have 'acquitted myſelf with regard to him 'as became a chriſtian and a F—b—s. 'He expired ſix months ago under all 'the benedictions of the church; yet, 'if you will reflect on that dreadful 'ſentence, "I will viſit the ſins of the "fathers unto the third and fourth ge-"neration," your wicked heart may 'tremble, leſt your unhallowed loins 'may have given an heir to hell.

'Think of this, thou wretch, and 'remember

'F—b—s.'

To

To return.—— I had no ſooner diſ-harged the aforementioned articles of ny duty, and paid the tribute of a few ears to the memory of my departed hild, in which Sukey accompanied me vith great cordiality, than I communi-ated to her the ſum and extent of my ortune, which, upon a thorough in-pection, amounted to barely five hun-lred pounds. As this was a ſum which, in ſuch a place as London, could not long be expected to ſupport two people in a courſe of idleneſs, I conſulted with Sukey what was beſt to be done in the preſent emergency.

After we had debated this matter for ſome time, nothing appeared more applicable to our preſent ſituation, than for me to purchaſe a place in ſome of the public offices, on the ſalary of which we might live with decency, while ſhe employed herſelf in plain-work, or if any money could be ſpared to put her into buſineſs, ſhe might com-

mence milliner, and endeavour to get ſomething that way.

In conſequence of this reſolution, I looked ſharp out for ſomething in the aforeſaid way, and it was not long before a very pompous advertiſement appeared in the public papers, ſetting forth, that a very handſome place of two hundred a year was to be diſpoſed of without loſs of time, and that principals were to apply immediately at a certain coffee-houſe in B——d ſtreet. In conſequence of this, I did not fail to give attendance; but was ſurprized to find the houſe already full of perſons of all ages, who had come with intent to treat about the very affair in queſtion. I had already drank three diſhes of coffee, and as many gills of wine, in hopes of coming to an explanation concerning the buſineſs in hand; but I was as near my point as at my firſt entrance: for not a ſyllable could I procure with the ſeller for love or money,

money, who was every now and then running up and down ſtairs with the greateſt hurry and precipitation, attended by ſuch a cluſter of young fellows at his heels, as put me in mind of the pupils of a principal ſurgeon at an hoſpital, when he is paying his duty there.

At length, by joining in with the cavalcade, after much difficulty, and meaſuring the altitude of the houſe from bottom to top ſeveral times, I did procure the happineſs of a word or two; when he very complaiſantly told me, that he was juſt about bringing the matter to a concluſion with a perſon above ſtairs: but, if I would only have patience for a few minutes, and ſtep into a private room, if he did not abſolutely diſpoſe of it then, I ſhould certainly have the next offer.

I was much pleaſed at this intelligence, and was retiring towards another apartment, in order to regale myſelf

over a little punch, when an old fellow in a laced coat very much tarniſhed, and who had received the very anſwer which had been given me, but five minutes before, perceiving every body complimented in the ſame manner, exclaimed with great fury, 'You 'and your place may be d——n'd! I 'believe it is all a bite upon the public, 'in order to draw cuſtom to the houſe 'at the expence of all the fools in 'town: but, d—n me, if I'll augment 'the number any longer;' and then went out in high dudgeon, leaving me in twenty minds to follow him; for I could have no idea how one thing could be bought by upwards of fifty people at once.

While I remained in this ſtate of ſuſpence, the alarm was given, that a bargain was ſtruck above ſtairs, and there was no farther occaſion for attendance: on which the company departed about their buſineſs; all of them not a little

little vexed at having ſpent ſo much time to ſo little purpoſe: many of whom ſhook their heads, and made uſe of the epithets, "Bite, d——n'd bite, hum-" "bug, and queer buffers," with ſymptoms of uncommon reſentment.

For my part, this and many other diſappointments of the like nature gave me a great diſlike to place-hunting; as I found that, during theſe reſearches, my money diſſolved apace: beſides, a few weeks after the firſt affair I was informed by an accidental acquaintance at an eating-houſe, that all this buſtle and ſolemnity had been calculated with no other view, than to draw in a young fellow to lend a round ſum upon the ſecurity of this very place in queſtion; which had produced this effect, that the the borrower had gone off, over head and ears in debt, having diſpoſed of his office to an acquaintance ſome days before in a private manner; and the man that advanced the money, not finding

his caſh come in according to expectation, was thrown into a jail, where he was like to repent of his folly and indiſcretion at leiſure.

This diſcovery did not in the leaſt contribute towards the ſatisfaction of my mind; as I perceived, that the longer I lived, I had the more opportunities to ſee the villainy of mankind in general, who preyed upon one another with more ſavage fury than the beaſts of the field; and I was even under ſhocking apprehenſions of waſting a year or two, in the fearful expectation of incroaching penury, and then augment the number of thoſe wretches, who had already fallen a victim to the villainy of deſtroying man.

I was greatly diſpirited at theſe ſort of reflections, when the following paragraph arouſed my attention, in ſpite of my former reſolution to the contrary;

'To

'To be diſpoſed of directly, for one hun-
'dred and ſeventy pounds ſterling, a
'very genteel place for life; ſalary
'and perquiſites amount to about a
'hundred pound per annum. En-
'quire at the R——— coffee-houſe
'in the ———.

'N. B. It is moſt earneſtly deſired, that
'no perſons will give themſelves the
'trouble to apply, as this is a real
'good thing, but they whoſe charac-
'ter in life will bear the moſt exact
'ſcrutiny.'

I thought this looked ſomething feaſible indeed, as it was not only a moderate competency for any man, but alſo exceſſive cheap, a circumſtance that ſuited the channel of my pockets and inclination extremely. Then again, the article of 'no perſon but of character 'and reputation are deſired to apply.' That looks well, thinks I, and this is certainly one of thoſe lucky hits, which happen, perhaps, once or twice in a

century, and are not to be overlooked. So I went after it in great expectations, taking the money in my pocket, to be ready to purchaſe upon the ſpot, if occaſion ſhould require it.

Upon entering the houſe, I was ſo far from ſeeing it crowded with company, as I had expected, that there was only the maſter and another man engaged in very earneſt converſation. As I thought they could have no idea that I was any other than a chance cuſtomer, I took up a news-paper, and began to read with a ſhew of great attention, but nevertheleſs with intent to overhear their diſcourſe the better unperceived. It was not long ere one of them broke out with, 'What a d—n'd loſs 'now is the deficiency of a little caſh 'to me, on this occaſion! — here I could 'have had an opportunity to provide 'for my family to all intents and pur-'poſes, for a hundred a year is no 'mean thing. Beſides, you ſay there

'is

'is no great attendance, and a man 'may follow any other buſineſs at plea- 'ſure. Had my poor ſon Will been 'alive now, and had but the duſt, this job 'would have done for him effectually: 'for the buſineſs of this place is ſuch 'as to admit of ſome leiſure time, in 'which you know a man may be get- 'ting a little pocket-money by poſting 'up any merchant's accounts a few 'hours in the day. But neither of theſe 'things can now be, and I am the 'moſt unfortunate man alive.'

Here he was ſucceeded by the land- lord, who pronounced in ſome ſurpriſe, 'I wonder what in the world Mr. —— 'means by this inconſiderate ſtep! 'Sure I am, the place he is now diſ- 'poſing of is well worth a hundred a 'year, including perquiſites. But I 'fancy the young fellow has been a 'little extravagant; and you know this 'London is the devil and all for lead-

'ing a man into debt. There are ſo 'many ways for one to employ one's 'money ſo agreeably, that a perſon 'very often over-runs the conſtable be-'fore he is aware; and when once a 'man, in a public office, gets inthralled 'with debt, it kicks up his heels at 'once, as he cannot attend his buſineſs 'without being arreſted, and if he ab-'ſconds, he loſes his place: for the 'king's work muſt be done at any rate.'

I thought theſe reaſons ſo ſatisfactory, that I was of opinion no time was to be loſt, leſt ſome new intruder might get the ſtart of me; and inquired, with ſome emotion, the nature of the affair they were ſpeaking of. Here the landlord told me with a very ſerious countenance, that it was no ſham thing, invented to draw in the ignorant and unwary, but actually a very handſome ſettlement for any ſingle man during life, with this advantage, that he might have

have an opportunity to diſpoſe of it again for the ſame money, at a minute's warning; and that it was inſerted in the preceding days papers at large.

But what is the nature of it, Sir? ſaid I, for I remember ſomething of it now; and if I like it, will become a purchaſer. But before he would anſwer me to this queſtion, he deſired to know if I was a ſingle man; to which I replied in the affirmative: when he aſſured me my buſineſs was done; for it was a competency for any perſon who could live within bounds, and would maintain him like a gentleman.

This information pleaſed me vaſtly. I aſſured him, that my paſſions were none of the moſt unreaſonable in their demands, and again demanded the nature and name of the buſineſs. 'I'll tell 'you what, Sir,' ſaid he, 'the purchaſe 'money is no more than one hundred

'and

'and ſeventy pounds, which, conſider-
'ing the annual income, is but a trifle.
'Then again, whoever has this place,
'is entitled to the freedom of the city,
'which ſhall be preſented him when
'the bargain is concluded; ſo that you
'ſee plainly, Sir, there is no bite here,
'and all is fair above board.'

But the name, Sir, ſays I. 'Why
'the name, Sir,' quoth he, 'is ad-
'mirably adapted to the buſineſs, and
'conveys an idea of its importance in
'a minute. Its name, Sir, is diſtin-
'guiſhed by the appellation of "Yeo-
"man to the ſheriffs of the city." I thought this indeed a very grand name, and promiſed to call again in a day or two, to give him a categorical anſwer: but he gave me to underſtand, that I was under a very great miſtake, to think a place of that nature would be half an hour in diſpoſing of, far leſs a couple of days; and obſerved, that if I had really

really any thoughts that way, I would do well to give earneſt directly, with a direction where to inquire after my character, and if approved of, that I might be found at a minute's warning: otherwiſe he could not promiſe to inſure its not being occupied by ſome other perſon, who had a better regard to their intereſt.

But I was determined to do nothing raſhly, ſince I had ſo often experienced the folly of truſting to appearances, however flattering; and took my leave for that time, fully reſolved to inquire a little farther into the matter.

Accordingly, the ſame evening, I went to an ale-houſe in Cheapſide, in order to conſult the maſter thereof, and learn the opinion of ſome citizens of my acquaintance on this occaſion. I was juſt beginning to open the affair to the landlord, when a diſpute ariſing among

among ſome dirty fellows in the kitchen, I overheard one of them cry out, 'D—n 'you, Sir, don't talk to me, I'm your 'betters;' which the other retorted by obſerving, that ſince he had diſfigured himſelf with that blue caſſock at the Old Baily, he had forgot himſelf, and was ſaucy; but for all his pride, he was no better than a bailiff's follower. 'You lie, you dog,' ſays his antagoniſt, 'I'm a yeoman to the ſheriff of 'the city.'

I was thoroughly alarmed at theſe words; and applying to the maſter, demanded the meaning of that office the man had ſpoken of: when he told me that he was a very ſilly fellow, and was not to be pitied, for that he had ruined himſelf by throwing away a deal of good money for nothing. The fellow was a ſhoemaker, ſays he, and might have lived comfortably enough, as his wife is a very induſtrious ſort of a body,

and

and beſides a moſt excellent houſe-wife; but inſtead of following his trade, he ſold all off, and purchaſed this place he was juſt now boaſting of; the income of which is only conditional for the moſt part, according as the owner applies himſelf to buſineſs; none of which reflects either honour or credit to the individual. It conſiſts chiefly in attending the inferior courts, ſuch as Guildhall and the Old Baily; fetching up the rear of a proceſſion on a Lord-mayor's day; and ſerving copies of writs. Indeed, his neighbour did not give it a wrong name in that of a bailiff's follower, for it is only fit to be conducted by people of that vocation.

I now thought myſelf extremely happy in having eſcaped this bait; and without hinting my intentions to any body, as I fancied that would only expoſe my own ignorance the more, I reſolved to lay aſide all farther dependance

on

on this ſcheme, which I found was the height of folly to build upon without ſome honeſt friend in power, and who knew thoroughly the nature of ſuch tranſactions; and turn my mind to ſomething elſe, that ſhould ward off the approaches of poverty and all its dreadful attendants.

In a few days I read the ſame advertiſement again, which, notwithſtanding all the landlord had ſaid, was prolonged for the ſpace of three weeks, with this alteration, that the purchaſe money was dwindled down to ſeventy pounds; at the end of which time I heard, that a young fellow, who in a courſe of ſeveral years ſervitude had ſcraped together a little money, was taken in by the ſpecious allurement, and either obliged to give a mean and laborious attendance, or then diſpoſe of his bargain for a third of the money: in which caſe the worthy maſter of the coffee-houſe was em-

ployed as broker, who not only, by
ans of theſe tranſactions, feathered
own neſt at the expence of both the
'er and ſeller, but alſo found a ne-
-failing remedy to enlarge his buſi-
ı, by attracting all the young fellows
London who were out of employ-
nt, and had a little caſh to favour his
ıſe, at leaſt five times a month, with
r cuſtom.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Lay aſide all thoughts of place-hunting. — Reſolve to turn publican, and apply to a regiſter-office. — Am harangued by the maſter, who inveighs bitterly againſt the villainy of brewers and diſtillers. — Profeſſes great friendſhip, and introduces me to a houſe in Southwark. — He practiſes a remarkable inſtance of his calling, but is prevented from reaping the fruits of his attachment by a queer diſcovery. — Sukey is ſeized with a violent fever, and dies the third day.

BUT though I had all the reaſon in the world to be ſatisfied in having ſo narrowly eſcaped this trap, yet, I could not help being very much diſpirited at my precarious ſituation; hourly lamenting that, amidſt a trading and flouriſhing city, I ſhould thus be devoid of all manner of buſineſs. And this

this was the more irkſome to me, not only as I ſaw my money melting away apace, but alſo, as my conſtitution was not calculated for inactivity, and my health viſibly declining. Sukey, indeed, poor girl, was indefatigable to render my expences as few as poſſible, and by cloſe application to plain-work, made ſhift to make both ends of the week anſwer without breaking in upon the capital: but ſtill this would never do, I languiſhed for action; and at laſt deſpairing of meeting with any offer to my mind, entertained the notion of commencing publican.

Though this was a ſtep that but ill ſuited my pride, yet I found that ſeveral very creditable people were embarked in that very branch, and ſome of them even made their fortunes by it in a few years.

I remembered alſo the words of my falſe friend, the ſtock-broker, which, how-

however fallacious in other reſpects, were certainly true in this caſe, viz. that a man without ſome buſineſs in London is looked upon as no better than a non-entity in the community, and liable to the inſpection of every petty warrant conſtable or juſtice of peace, as a perſon dangerous to ſociety.

In order, therefore, to take time while time was, and do ſomething before my all was gone, I communicated my intentions to my wife, who approved of them greatly, and hugged herſelf not a little in the exact management ſhe would obſerve in her family, and the figure ſhe ſhould cut in a well furniſhed bar.

Full of this ſcheme, I bent my mind to bring it to bear in the moſt effectual manner, and applied forthwith to a noted regiſter-office, where I paid my quota very readily, and likewiſe treated the maſter with a bowl of punch, in order

order to influence him the more in my favour. He accordingly promiſed me wonders; obſerved, that a public way was actually at this juncture the moſt thriving trade in the Univerſe; and aſked me, if I could afford to go the length of one hundred guineas.

Glad of this opportunity to manifeſt my importance, I told him, that if any genteel thing of good cuſtom and eſtabliſhed reputation ſhould fall in his way, I would not even ſcruple to go the length of three hundred upon a pinch, and if it had conveniencies for raiſing up a few ſtables upon the premiſes, ſo much the better, as I might then make ſomething by letting out horſes; for that I reſolved to enter into the ſpirit of the buſineſs at once.

'Say you ſo?' quoth this worthy member of the community, 'Ecod! I 'ſee you are another gueſs ſort of a 'man, than many I have met with. — 'Let

'Let me alone to do your buſineſs.—'I love to ſee young men of ſpirit—'there is nothing like it — you can then 'have an opportunity to keep your 'brewer and diſtiller under, who, to tell 'you a ſecret, that I wou'dn't chuſe 'to acquaint every body with, I do aſ-'ſure you, are very good ſervants, but 'extreme bad maſters. What is the 'reaſon, d'ye think, of ſo many public 'houſes to be let every other day? 'Why nothing in the world but this— 'a fooliſh couple have no ſooner ſcraped 'together the ſum of ſixty or ſeventy 'pounds, than, unwilling to remain 'longer in a ſtate of ſervile dependance, 'they muſt forſooth be for commencing 'houſekeepers, and entering among the 'honourable order of publicans. It is 'an eaſy matter to take a houſe, and 'throw away the beſt part of their 'money upon the purchaſe of fixtures, 'and what not; nay, even to procure 'credit with their brewer and diſtiller 'to boot: but, not having a ſufficient

'fund

'fund in bank, if trade is a little dead 'at firſt, as in moſt caſes, it generally 'is, even in the beſt of houſes, they are 'then under a neceſſity to run ſtill far-'ther in debt to theſe men; who, if 'not perſons of a very chriſtian prin-'ciple, oblige them to take the very 'refuſe of their liquors, which, not 'anſwering their cuſtomers palates, theſe 'conſcientious creditors directly ſeize 'upon the premiſes to indemnify them-'ſelves, and, by a writ of ejectment, 'turn the wretched fools into the wide 'world, to repent of their folly at lei-'ſure — So that I again ſay, Sir, you 'are extremely in the right of it, to 'begin with a full hand; and I will do 'for you, I promiſe you.'

I was wonderfully taken with the open dealing of the man; and when I went home, gave a detail of the particulars of this conference to my wife, who obſerved, that all theſe things were not only probable, but might be likewiſe

wife true, and yet the regiſter-man nevertheleſs a rogue for all that, and adviſed me to do nothing raſhly, but to proceed with caution in the affair.

In a very few days after this conference he waited upon me with ſymptoms of infinite ſatisfaction in his countenance, and ſhaking me by the hand, 'My 'dear friend,' ſays he, 'now or never 'is the time to ſettle yourſelf to the 'ſummit of your wiſhes. A houſe that 'might not diſgrace my lord mayor to 'live in, is now to be let — I ſmelt this 'out preſently, being a little cunning, 'but I verily believe there is not ano'ther perſon in London ſo much as 'ſuſpects the leaſt thought of ſuch a 'thing; otherwiſe, God have mercy on 'us — there would be no coming within 'the reach of it for a thouſand pounds.'

Though I had no great opinion of all this flouriſhing, I was nevertheleſs reſolved to ſee the iſſue of the affair, and

and accompanied him to the borough of Southwark. Juſt as we had croſſed London bridge, he ſtopt ſhort of a ſudden, and pretending to recollect himſelf, begged me to ſtep into a public houſe, where we could have a tiff of punch, as he had a note of ſome diſpatches to take down upon paper.

Accordingly in we went, and after a little ſtay, he obſerved that he had fixed the maſter of the houſe we were in, into as good bread as any in the city, and only ſix weeks before. During the time our punch was making, my conductor took occaſion to aſk the landlord how trade went on, and took notice that this young gentleman, meaning me, was juſt going to increaſe the number of the fraternity — and where d'ye think is to be the place? why, no other than the twelve B—s in St. M—y O—v—y's church-yard.

He had no ſooner uttered this laſt obſervation, than mine hoſt laying the bowl of punch out of his trembling hand upon the table, aſſumed a moſt ghaſtly look, accompanied with a faultering voice, and exclaimed, 'God forbid! no, ſure, you do but joke! and 'only want to frighten me.—The twelve 'B—s in St. M—y O—v—y's church-'yard to be let! is it poſſible? If I could 'but think my good and truſty friend 'Mr. M——l could be capable of uſing 'me thus, I don't know what might be 'the conſequence.' He then threw himſelf back in his chair, and remained ſtupidly mute for ſome ſeconds, till at laſt he thought proper to break ſilence, by demanding in a furious tone, What the devil he meant by clapping him into ſuch a little puny, paultry place, where he was almoſt ſtiffled for want of breath, when ſuch a glorious and magnificent houſe was to be diſpoſed of, where a man might make double the rent by lodgers; obſerving, he would not have valued

valued the quitting his preſent houſe, if he ſhould have paid the whole year's charges, and been at the expence of moving all his furniture to boot, could he have only been ſo happy as to have known this ſooner; and concluded with telling him in pretty ſevere terms, that he had uſed him damn'd ill, and he ſhould take care to reſent it accordingly.

My good friend now thought it incumbent upon him to make ſome apologies for this raſh ſtep in breach of friendſhip, by moſt ſolemnly proteſting that he had not the leaſt knowledge of the matter till late laſt night, and that in the nature of things it was impracticable to have done otherwiſe, without incurring a vaſt expence. 'Expence!' ſaid the landlord, 'd—n expence! when 'a man has an opportunity of ſettling 'himſelf for life, what ſignifies the trif-'ling ſum of a few ſcore of guineas?'

'For Heaven's ſake, Sir,' quoth the regiſter-keeper, 'don't be in all this 'paſſion. I am not ſure but the maſter 'may keep it up ſome few months 'longer, in order to raiſe the good will; 'but at any rate be ſure to be ſilent 'as to this affair: for ſhould the thing 'once come to be blown, it might do 'me a great injury, and yourſelf no 'good.'

But all theſe flattering ſuggeſtions loſt much of their intended effect upon me. I remembered the proceedings of the Fleet-merchant too well to be taken in by a ſimilitude; and, without hinting my mind to either of them, made a motion to proceed to buſineſs, reſolving to ſee to the bottom of it.

At going away, the landlord ſaluted me with, 'Well, Sir, what muſt be, 'muſt be, and there is no help for fa'tality. I wiſh you much joy of your 'happy proſpects, though I can't help 'envying

'envying you a little neither: but 'every man has his good and ill for- 'tune, and you have yours. My motto, 'I find, muſt be fair and ſoftly, but other 'people have their own luck and the 'devil's to boot. You'll excuſe my 'homely proverb, Sir; but 'tis an old 'ſaying and a true, one man may ſlave 'on all his days in a pitiful ſervile 'drudgery, and hardly keep life and 'ſoul together, while another ſhall jump 'into an eſtate at once, and that by 'the very ſame means that proved his 'neighbour's ruin.'

When we entered the premiſes, I found the publican had not ſaid wrong, when he called it a glorious and magnificent houſe. It was indeed large enough to lodge ſeveral companies of grenadiers in, it being no leſs than five ſtories high. Though, what ſurpriſed me not a little, was, that this huge overgrown manſion had not a living ſoul of a cuſtomer in it all the time of my viſit-

ing the ſeveral apartments; which, when I took notice of with ſome wonder, they told me, that all company was prohibited for that day, for fear of diſturbing the miſtreſs of the houſe, who was extremely ill with a violent pain in the head. I thought this account pretty ſingular, that ſhe could not find one corner in ſo large a place to hide herſelf in, without affronting her cuſtomers by turning them forcibly out of doors.

In going over the ſeveral rooms, the maſter, in whoſe countenance was viſibly pictured ruin, poverty, and deſpair, was very complaiſantly telling me the manifold uſes that each might be put to, in order to improve the trade; and when we mounted the upper-ſtory, he took notice of the glorious ſituation of a ſort of barricaded balcony with a cover to it, and after expatiating on the pleaſant proſpect it had all over the Thames, took notice, it would be the

fineſt

fineſt place in the world for a taylor to accommodate his journeymen at their work, who, being exalted ſo high above their neighbours, would inchant the whole pariſh with the muſic of their voices, and cherup out harmony like ſo many nightingales.

This curious obſervation had ſuch an effect upon my riſible faculties, that I burſt out in a violent fit of laughter, and deſired to know, why he, that was ſuch an excellent ſchemer, did not put this fine thought in practice? telling him, that as the taylors would ſing like nightingales, they would infallibly be under a neceſſity to drink like fiſhes, and conſequently be a moſt excellent indoors trade for a certainty. He was diſconcerted very much at this queſtion; and after a little pauſe, was fain to lay his omiſſion of ſo important an article to the care he had of his wife's health, which would certainly be much injured by the tumultuous noiſe of ſo many

baſs-viols. But I objected to this argument, by obſerving, with an ironical ſneer that gave him very unpromiſing hopes of ſucceſs, that the beſt way to remove that inconvenience would have been to eſtabliſh a weekly, or even a daily club of oiſter-women and bunters, to be ſtationed in the oppoſite apartment, who, joyning their treble to the taylors baſs muſic, would not have failed to have rendered the whole an agreeable concert.

He made no reply to this, otherwiſe than by a forced ſmile, and aſking me to ſtep with him into another part of the houſe. In ſhort, when we had ranged over the whole place from top to bottom, during which every piece of furniture exhibited the appearance of deſolation, I deſired to be acquainted with the particulars of coming in, that I might the better know how to proceed; telling him I had conceived an extraordinary liking to the ſituation, and

as

as my wife was not diſturbed with thoſe ſort of troubleſome diſorders attendant on his, I could more eaſily bring his project of the taylors to bear.

On this my landlord very gravely went to a bureau, and taking out a ſcroll of paper, put it into my hands, telling me, that I would find an account of the whole expence included in that bill, which, when I had opened it, I found to be as follows:

To ſtock in trade at prime coſt —— ——	50	0	0
To fixtures, and furniture	50	0	0
To utenſils in the buſineſs	10	0	0
To good-will for being allowed to come in ——	50	0	0
Total £.	160	0	0

While I was examining the particulars of this bill, a poor draggle-tailed wretch came in, being the firſt living ſoul I had ſeen of a ſtranger ſince my

entrance, and covering all the kitchen-fire over with ſprats, called for half a pint of beer. The maſter made many ſevere remonſtrances againſt this proceeding, but received nothing but abuſive language in return; but ſhe had hardly taſted the beer before ſhe declared with a multiplicity of oaths, that it was as ſour as vinegar, and roared out for a quartern of gin to prevent the bad effects of the beer, which ſhe was ſure would not fail to give her a fit of the cholick.

He was juſt endeavouring to apologize to me for the woman's behaviour, when a large body of men approached the door, at which my landlord changed colour, and was ſo overpowered at the ſight of theſe unwelcome viſitors, that he almoſt fainted away. My conductor himſelf appeared alſo very much diſconcerted; while the landlady, hearing more than ordinary commotion below ſtairs, notwithſtanding her ſevere head-

head-ach, made ſhift to crawl down ſtairs, and, at ſight of the ſtrangers, was almoſt ſtruck dead with her fears.

I ſoon found the cauſe of all this confuſion to be owing to the collectors of pariſh rates, who, having been put off from time to time, were now come to carry their commiſſions in execution. This they did ſo effectually, that in a few minutes there was not a ſingle piece of ſmall furniture to be ſeen in the houſe which they had not packed up, in order to make good the arrears that were due.

Finding by this unexpected accident, that there was no farther proſpect of profiting by my hands, or indeed by any other perſon, as the poverty of the buſineſs would ſoon become notorious like a ſpreading contagion, the unfortunate couple kept no longer meaſures or bounds to their reſentment; they broke out into the moſt opprobrious invectives

vectives and reproaches on the villany of the office-keeper, who, they ſaid, had ruined them for ever by his deceitful wickedneſs; and recounted, to my infinite amazement, no leſs than twelve poor families whom he had brought to deſtruction by means of his diabolical practices, in the ſpace of ſix months, and the half of that number in the very ſame houſe.

I was ſo ſtruck with horror at hearing theſe monſtrous proceedings, which indeed the poor ſouls in queſtion manifeſted both by their looks and ſituation, were but too true, that I ſnatched up a fire-ſhovel, and had not the villain evaded my blow by dexterouſly quitting the ground immediately, I ſhould infallibly have laid him ſprawling.

Before I took my leave of the poor deluded people, I underſtood from them, that when they came into the houſe, the office-keeper had found means to repreſent

preſent things in ſuch a light, that they had actually given thirty guineas good will; but had not been in poſſeſſion five days, before a number of taxes unpaid for quarters before, came upon their hands, and they found the licence was not valid; that beſides, they had had ſo little cuſtom, that their whole ſtock of beer was ſpoiled; and, in a word, that they were many pounds worſe than nothing, being in danger of a jail every hour. I now took my leave, and returned home, exceedingly chagrined at this day's tranſactions.

Soon after, to augment my melancholy condition, my poor Sukey, who very probably had taken theſe many diſappointments to heart, fell ſick, and notwithſtanding all poſſible endeavours to aſſiſt and preſerve her, the perſeverance of a burning fever baffled all attempts of the faculty, and, by its inveterate obſtinacy, plainly ſhewed her hour to be almoſt come.

On

On the third day of this fatal viſitor, finding her ſpirits decline apace, and that ſhe could not long promiſe to enjoy the free uſe of her ſenſes, as her head already began to be filled with ſtrange phantoms, ſhe called me to her bed-ſide, and, in broken accents, addreſſed me thus:

'My deareſt huſband, I am now 'going to give an account of all my 'actions to that Eternal Being, who is 'the Judge of all hearts, and ſearcheth 'the moſt ſecret thoughts of men. But 'as he has been pleaſed, of his merci-'ful goodneſs, to call me out of the 'ſinful ſtate I was in, and given me a 'ſufficient portion of his grace to enable 'me, by a ſteady adherence to the prin-'ciples of virtue, to work a thorough 'reformation in my life and manners, 'I have the leſs to fear; happy in this, 'that, ſince our union, I have diſcharged 'my duty both to him and to you, as 'much as in me lay; and that I am

'to

'to appear before him in his own time,
'and not in that I had marked out for
'myſelf, and in which I muſt have
'periſhed for ever, had not his goodneſs
'and mercy prevented it, by ſending
'you to my aid———

She was going to proceed, but the hand of death was upon her, and ſhe expired immediately, leaving me ſo ſtupified with the alternate paſſions of grief and deſpair, that I fell into a kind of delirium, and talked to her as if ſhe had been ſtill ſenſible of my kindneſs: but, alas! upon awakening from this ſtate of deluſion, to my eternal ſorrow I found ſhe was gone for ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

In order to diſſipate my melancholy, I go to Maidenhead races. — Engage in play, and carry off an hundred and ſeventy pounds. — Find means to over-reach a ſharper for two hundred guineas.

THIS fatal ſtroke quite unhinged me; I was no longer the ſame jovial ſprightly young fellow as before; the moſt delightful ſcenes of gaiety and pleaſure were taſteleſs to me, and nature put on an unwonted appearance of gloom. I found myſelf deprived all at once of the moſt agreeable companion, the moſt diſintereſted friend, the ableſt counſellor, and the tendereſt wife that ever man was bleſſed with.

I had experienced the folly and ſhallow foundation of truſting to appearances,

pearances, from the villanous behaviour of the ſtock-broker, and numberleſs other inſtances beſides; and now, when I had found out a moſt faithful friend, a notable adviſer in the moſt preſſing emergencies, and a moſt agreeable wife and diſcrete partner, to be ſecluded from her endearing company by the cruel hand of death, and juſt in the infancy of our fellowſhip, was a blow which all my philoſophy could hardly bear. My ſpirits, hitherto extremely volatile, now ſunk almoſt to the extreme verge of deſpair; and that lively genius, which had all along prompted me to ſoar upon the moſt elevated wings of fancy, was now condenced to a degree of ſtupefaction, and which was greatly increaſed, when I found that all I had remaining of my fortune was only four hundred pounds, a ſum which, in my then way of life, was hardly ſufficient to maintain me a couple of years.

In

In this dejection of ſoul, and to chace away the melancholy reflections that intruded upon my mind on the thoughts of my lonely condition, I hired a horſe, and reſolved to take a ride up to Maidenhead races, where I heard there was to be excellent ſport. But that I might not be tempted a ſecond time to venture the loſs of my money in a buſineſs with which I was ſo little acquainted, I took no more than five guineas in my pocket, and determined to live as ſparingly as poſſible, to compenſate for this excurſion.

Upon entering the courſe, there were a vaſt number of the nobility and gentry preſent, which ſight ſo animated my ſpirits, that I repented a thouſand times I had not brought more money with me. However, that I might not intirely remain an idle ſpectator, while other people were ſo agreeably employed, I ventured to lay two guineas with

with a Londoner, who had accompanied me part of the way, and I had the good fortune to gain this firſt bet.

Fluſhed with ſo lucky a beginning, I doubled the ſtakes on the ſide of a horſe that belonged to the duke of C———, and was ſo fortunate as to ſucceed here alſo. This double advantage did my buſineſs effectually. I proceeded boldly; and mixing among the better company, accepted a gentleman's offer on the part of a cheſnut gelding for ten guineas, which I had the ſatisfaction to pocket in a trifle of time. There was no ſtopping my career now: I ventured with half a dozen at a time, and fortune ſtill favouring my boldneſs, I found myſelf by ſunſet one hundred and ſeventy guineas in pocket.

I thought now it was a diſgrace to be ſeen on a common hired horſe, tho' I had

I had the conſolation to perceive many well-dreſſed people on the place worſe mounted: I therefore agreed with my landlord, to let me have the uſe of one of the beſt horſes in his ſtable, which he readily agreed to, and I made him a ſuitable return.

Next day I attended the races in vaſt ſpirits, having a deſign in my head, which I put in practice in this manner: I had over night acquainted my landlord with my extraordinary good fortune, on which he congratulated me very joyfully; obſerving, that if I laid a large ſum upon the ſide of a black gelding belonging to Sir Francis D——d, I might make my fortune, as he had overheard a diſcourſe between the two jockeys that were to ride them, which plainly ſhewed there was roguery in the caſe; that many people would be very diſagreeably deceived on the event of that heat, and I was at liberty to improve

prove the hint to the beſt advantage. This I did not fail to promiſe, and at the ſame time thanked him for ſo ſeaſonable an inſinuation. But by this time I had gained ſuch an inſight into mankind, as very much to doubt the veracity of any man who profeſſed ſo much civility to an utter ſtranger; and reſolved for this once to ſhew him a ſpecimen of northern ſagacity and comprehenſion.

Furniſhed with this ſeaſonable precaution, I determined to act warily, and at leaſt keep what I had got, if I could ſee no hopes to double it; when a country gentleman, ſeemingly to outward appearance, accoſted me with, 'One hundred guineas to fifty on the 'ſide of that black gelding.' This was juſt as I had expected; and not doubting but he was the perſon engaged to fleece me, I told him I was ſo far from oppoſing him in that reſpect, that I would

I would lay him fifty to ten on the ſame ſide. 'Two hundred guineas to fifty 'on the black gelding,' cried he, 'and 'down with the money.' By this time the horſes were juſt ready to ſtart, and our altercation drawing a crowd of gentlemen around us, I let him repeat his bet of two hundred to fifty on the black gelding in the hearing of all the ſpectators, which he was the rather induced to do, from a ſuppoſition that I would never accept him after the laſt night's tutoring, and in order to draw me in the deeper, when I took him up ſhort, by crying out, 'Done! fifty 'to two hundred on the part of lord 'G——'rs Arabian.'

This unexpected turn had ſuch an effect on my antagoniſt, that he had almoſt dropt from his ſaddle, and was preparing to ſlink off in great confuſion, when I inſiſted he ſhould either down with the money, or attend the iſſue,

and a number of gentlemen, then
nt, forcing him thereto, he was
ed to give me the full ſum upon
eat's turning out in my favour.
he came by ſo thorough an intelli-
e, as to the event of this affair, was a
; I could not comprehend: but I had
my hopes ſo firmly, that no ſtranger
d adviſe me to any thing of that
re, but with a view to cheat me;
I was determined to riſk fifty
ds on the iſſue, and if I loſt it,
ave a better opinion of mankind
after, even in ſpite of the moſt
omiſing appearances.

his was the only time I had ever
d with any degree of ſagacity in af-
of this nature. I hugged myſelf
ly on ſo large an acquiſition to my
une in two days; and the races
ng the ſame night, I found myſelf
four hundred pounds a winner.

In

In the evening, when I returned to my inn, I thanked my landlord very complaiſantly for his agreeable intimation, and told him, that I had not failed to improve his hint as he directed: but by his confuſed anſwers and inverted looks, I had great reaſon to believe, that he had loſt more by this day's buſineſs, than he was likely to make up by ſhort meaſure and bad wine in a twelvemonth.

END of VOL. II.

THE

LIFE

AND

REAL ADVENTURES

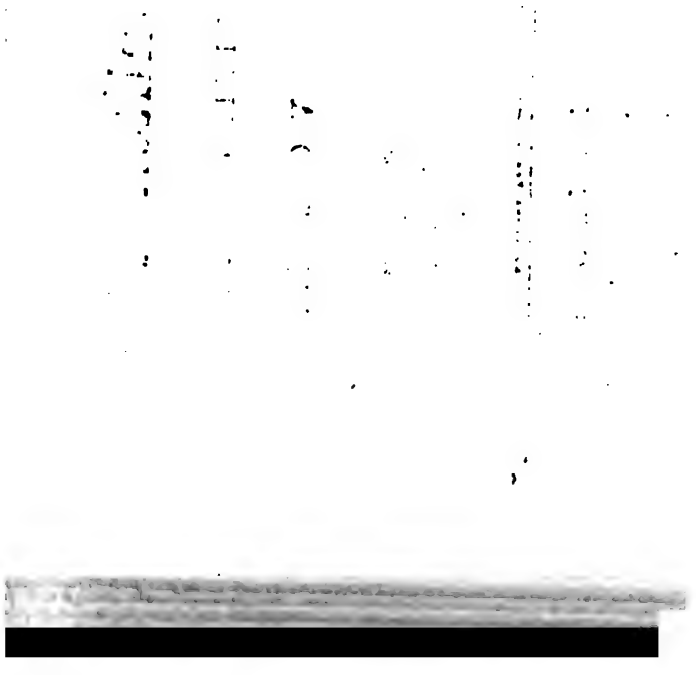
OF

Hamilton Murray.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
Printed for the AUTHOR;
And Sold by J. BURD, Printer, in New-Street,
Shoe-Lane.
MDCCLIX.



THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

Convert my caſh into bank notes, and ſet out for London. — Am attacked on Hounſlow-heath by a ſingle highwayman, who robs me of my watch and money. — See him three days afterwards on Ludgate-hill. — Trace him to Piccadilly, and diſcover him to be my Edinburgh acquaintance, O Raily. page 1

CHAP. II.

Engage in partnerſhip with Raily. — Pick up money at the billiard-tables. — He adviſes me to better my

fortune by matrimony.—Am charmed at the propoſal, and lay down a plan of procedure.—Turn methodiſt, and frequent the chapels of L—g-A—e and M—f—ds. — Make very liberal donations, which procure me the eſteem of the paſtor.— Am admitted to a private converſation, during which I am entertained with a curious phænomenon, exhibited on the nerves of a rich old maid by electricity. 12

CHAP. III.

I attend chapel with freſh aſſiduity.— Ingratiate myſelf into the good graces of the old lady, who invites me home with her to drink tea. — Am tranſported at the ſplendor of her apartment, and make ſome high encomiums on her beauty. — Begin a grand movement, but am fruſtrated by the unſeaſonable intruſion of her

her footman. — She returns me the compliment of a viſit at my houſe, where I accompliſh part of my deſign by a ſingular method. — Am rendered the happieſt of men. 30

CHAP. IV.

Impart the news of my ſucceſs to Raily. — He is entranced at the proſpects before us. — I invite the lady to Chelſea in a four-wheeled chaiſe. — Propoſe marriage, which ſhe conſents to. — Make mention of a very pompous ſettlement, which produces a moſt ſhocking diſcovery. — Find the foundation of all my hopes to be grounded on a trifling annuity. — Break up the correſpondence in high dudgeon. 50

CHAP. V.

Go home in a tranſport of rage, and communicate my ill ſucceſs to Rai-

ly.— He is ſorely vexed at the diſappointment, and exhibits an inſtance of his Iriſh fidelity by decamping with one hundred pounds of my money.— I meet my old clubmate the poet, and reſolve to commence author.— He introduces me to an aſſembly of the brotherhood in the vicinity of Lincoln's-inn fields.— A ſtrange diſcovery is made by one of the members, which lays the foundation for a curious pamphlet.—The importance of a flea diſcuſſed upon a new principle. 72

CHAP. VI.

I lay aſide all thoughts of authorizing.— Go into the city, and am ſmitten with the charms of a young lady in the ſtreet.— Trace her home in extaſies, and diſcover a bill over the door to let lodgings.— Find means to ſettle myſelf as a border in the family.

CHAP. X.

Quit the premiſes in ſtrange diſorder.— Reſolve to amuſe myſelf in a coffee-houſe. — Join in converſation with two ſea-officers, which occaſions my embarking in a perilous adventure.— We enter the harbour of Havre de Grace on the coaſt of France, and cut out a rich St. Domingo-man.— Arrive ſafely with our prize at Portſmouth, which we diſpoſe of to good account.— My fortune is made by this expedition. 202

CHAP. XI.

Arrive in town. — Prepare a moſt elegant preſent for my miſtreſs, and explore my way to the apothecary's. — I open my intentions to her guardian, and obtain his conſent to our union. — My intereſting interview with Sophy, wherein is exhibited a night-

night-ſcene, worthy the imitation of all true lovers. — By an unexpected turn of Providence, I find myſelf maſter of twenty thouſand pounds.— Our nuptials are conſummated with decency and order, and theſe memoirs are brought to a happy concluſion. 224

THE

mily. — Am agreeably ſurpriſedat a ſecond interview to meet with Dick Savage, who proves to be journeyman to my landlord.— He lets me into the characters of each individual. 100

CHAP. VII.

I grow in favour with the apothecary. — Buy a ſhare in a private ſhip of war. — Harangue a club of ſhopkeepers on the nature of trade. — Accompany the ladies to Vauxhall.— What happened there. 124

CHAP. VIII.

Am horribly perplexed at my precarious ſituation, and find myſelf more and more in love.—Conſult with my friend Dick, who adviſes me to declare my paſſion.— Invite my miſtreſs to Hampton-court, and make a full diſcovery of my heart.—Am bleſſed with a mutual return of affection, and

and come home in a tranſport of unbounded joy. 151

CHAP. IX.

Conſult with Dick on the ſpeedieſt way to eſtabliſh my fortune. — I propoſe the gaming-table. — He diſſuades me from this raſh ſtep, and goes out ſurgeon in a privateer. — I aſſume the garb of a gentleman-commoner from Oxford, and introduce myſelf at a dutcheſs's houſe. — Have a run of luck, and preſent my miſtreſs with a gold repeater. — Wager two hundred guineas on the recovery of a peereſs from a burning fever, and loſe it. — Toſs up with a young lord for one hundred pieces, and come off a looſer. — Decline in my fortune daily, and am ruined by the villany of Raily. — My affecting farewell with Sophy. — We interchange mutual vows of love. 169

CHAP.

THE

LIFE and ADVENTURES

OF

HAMILTON MURRAY.

CHAP. I.

Convert my caſh into bank notes, and ſet out for London. — Am attacked on Hounſlow-heath by a ſingle highwayman, who robs me of my watch and money. — See him three days afterwards on Ludgate-hill. — Trace him to Piccadilly, and diſcover him to be my Edinburgh acquaintance, O Raily.

HAVING turned my five guineas to ſo good account, I converted my caſh into bank notes, and reſolved to paſs a few days

at Windſor, in viewing the caſtle, the foreſt, and every thing curious, before I returned to London.

Here I ſtayed eight days, and was croſſing Hounſlow-heath in my way home, when I was attacked by a ſingle highwayman well mounted, who preſented a piſtol to my breaſt, and in an Iriſh accent demanded my money. I had never been uſed to ſuch unmannerly diſcourſe as this before; for hitherto I was pillaged by the fawning flattery of a well dilembled tongue: but finding ſuch a remarkable inſtance of plain dealing, I liked the fellow's humour ſo well, that I complied with his requeſt without heſitation, and told him at parting, that he was the honeſteſt man I had met with for a long time. I was under no apprehenſions leſt he ſhould rifle my pocket-book wherein was my whole cargo of bank notes, which made me give him ſuch good words; but my gold watch and twenty guineas were ſo much

much above his expectations from a ſingle paſſenger, that he never recollected this article, but broke out in a tranſport of joy, 'You are the moſt 'complaiſant young gentleman in Eng-'land; and may the devil run round 'the race-march with me, if I'll da-'mage the hair of your head.'

So ſaying, he wiſhed me a good night, and rode off, leaving me very much ſtartled at the tone of his voice, which I could not help thinking I was ſomewhat acquainted with, as alſo his perſon and features, for he was above uſing any diſguiſe, and it was yet broad day. All the way home I dwelt upon this affair with the greateſt attention; and could I have perſuaded myſelf, that my old friend ORaily was in England, I could have ſworn him to be the man. However, as I was not ſure of this particular, I thought it beſt to take no notice of my ſuſpicion, and leave the diſcovery to time.

In a few days I was fully convinced, that my conjecture had not been falſe grounded: for happening to walk down Ludgate-hill, who ſhould I ſee on the other ſide of the way, but the very man who had made ſo free with my property on the common. At this diſcovery I turned gently over the ſtreet, and keeping at a proper diſtance, traced him from one place to another, till he arrived at Charing-Croſs, from whence he ſtruck up the Hay-market, and went into an inn in Piccadilly. I juſt gave him time to be ſeated in the tap-room, when I entered, and, under pretence of inquiring when the Oxford ſtage-coach ſet out, took that opportunity to ſurvey his features effectually; when I ſoon found him to be my very individual friend and old acquaintance ORaily, who had ſo decently conducted my juvenile excurſions at Edinburgh.

Thorough-

Thoroughly convinced of the truth of this circumſtance, I was at a loſs how to proceed, as I had no intentions to hurt him, and yet was unwilling to loſe my watch, for which I had a great value. At laſt I ſlipt over the way to a neighbouring coffee-houſe, and calling for a pint of wine and a private room, deſired the boy to ſtep to the oppoſite inn and tell ſuch a gentleman, giving him a deſcription of his perſon, that his company was wanted immediately at their houſe.

During the lad's abſence, I was under uneaſy apprehenſions, leſt he ſhould have known me again, or be filled with ſuch fears of an ambuſcade, as were natural to a perſon in his ſituation, and not come at all. But I was ſoon relieved from ſuch thoughts by his entering the room, and demanding my buſineſs, for that he had not the happineſs to be acquainted with me in the leaſt. Yes, Sir, ſays I, you are very

well acquainted with me, I am ſure, elſe you would never have taken the freedom to borrow my watch and money ſo familiarly on the king's highway, as you did laſt Thurſday evening: but as you might be in ſome ſtrait at that juncture, I excuſe your liberty; and only deſire the favour of a re-imburſement directly, as I ſeldom care for giving long credit.

Hearing me go on in this ſtrain, he turned pale, and would fain have made ſome equivocations, when I ſtopt him ſhort by ſaying, Come, come, Mr. Raily, there is no neceſſity for evaſions — I have no intention to hurt you on any account — and you may thank God, you have fallen into ſuch hands; every body would not be thus diſpoſed to favour a man in your circumſtances. Only reſtore my watch and money, and the affair proceeds no farther.

'I de-

'I declare, Sir,' ſays he, 'I am at 'a loſs to recollect you. Pray aſſiſt 'my memory in this particular, that I 'may be ſo happy as to know the man 'to whom I owe ſo much. I hope 'you are too generous to take any ad-'vantage over a miſerable man.—I can-'not ſuſpect ſuch a thing, ſince your ho-'nourable treatment; and I beg to be 'favoured with the name of my bene-'factor.'

When I found him in this paſſive mood, and that he behaved in all reſpects with tractability (for I muſt own I had not been without ſome fears of having my brains blown out by a pocket piſtol upon the firſt word ſpeaking) I aſked him, if he had ſo ſoon forgot his old acquaintance Hamilton Murray, or the circumſtance of rolling the inſpired cobler in the ſugar-barrel? At which he held up his hands in amazement, and had only power to cry out,

'By J—s! who would have thought 'it!'

We came now to a pretty good underſtanding together. He returned me my watch and money upon the ſpot, all but five guineas he had expended; and upon my inquiring how long he had followed this courſe of life, he ſwore very heartily that this had been the firſt exploit of the kind he had ever committed; and as he was ſenſible, that another man might have encountered him as well as me, he was reſolved to live honeſt for the future.

I was glad to hear of this, as I ſhould otherwiſe have been horribly frightened to keep up any correſpondence with him at all, and deſired to be acquainted with the particulars of his fortune, ſince my leaving Scotland. On this he informed me, that, in conſequence of his order to quit Edinburgh, he had come directly

directly by ſea to London, where, not finding matters turn out according to expectation, he was ſoon reduced to great miſery, when he found means to ingratiate himſelf ſo far into the good graces of a certain worthy matron, remarkable for her zeal in promoting a good underſtanding between the ſexes, that by her induſtry he was recommended to a certain old merchant's widow of great fortune, who allowed him very handſomely for ſome time, till at laſt ſhe was carried off by a dropſy, when he was once more brought to his ſhifts, and experienced the deficiency of caſh to an extremity for the ſpace of three months; at the end of which he was ſummoned a ſecond time to buſineſs, in order to ſolace the wife of an aſthmatic clergyman, who was by no means qualified to ingraft his ſpiritual admonitions in ſo prevailing a manner, as his comfortleſs helpmate required, till after ſix weeks hard duty he was

diſcharged from farther ſervice, in order to make room for a journeyman ſtay-maker, who had fitted on her jumps ſo neatly, that he was employed in his ſtation ever after. In a word, he found the trade ſo ruinous to his conſtitution, that, though he was of a very athletick habit, he was under a neceſſity to expend three parts in four of his income, in repairing the decays of nature by a plentiful infuſion of aſſes milk, and after all was near going off lately in a conſumption, which had induced him to have recourſe to the highway for a ſubſiſtence, rather than breathe a living death for a few months, and at laſt quit the ſtage by a hectick.

I was much diverted at my companion's adventures, and aſked him, why he did not rather chuſe to go to ſervice, than expoſe his life to danger, by ſo hazardous an occupation as that of a collector on the roads; when he gave

gave me to underſtand, that his chief motive for ſo doing was in order to raiſe a ſum of money, ſufficient to equip him in the character of a gentleman, when he made no queſtion but that he could eaſily pick up ſome rich old woman in the nature of a wife, whoſe wants he was perfectly acquainted with, and capable ſtill of gratifying.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Engage in partnerſhip with Raily.— Pick up money at the billiard-tables.— He adviſes me to better my fortune by matrimony.— Am charmed at the propoſal, and lay down a plan of procedure.—Turn methodiſt, and frequent the chapels of L—g-A—e and M—f—ds. — Make very liberal donations, which procure me the eſteem of the paſtor.— Am admitted to a private converſation, during which I am entertained with a curious phænomenon, exhibited on the nerves of a rich old maid by electricity.

I HAD not carried on an intimacy with my old companion many days after this diſcovery, before I began to like his converſation extremely. I found a moſt effectual reſource from all attacks of the ſpleen and low ſpirits in his

his company, as he was admirably turned for humour. He was alſo an exquiſite judge of moſt games in faſhion, by whoſe means I ſoon reaped conſiderable experience therein, as in about ſix weeks after our recommencing acquaintance, I was able to behave myſelf in moſt polite games with tolerable propriety.

In conſequence of theſe advantages, as I then thought them, I conſidered him as a part of myſelf; and taking a ſet of elegant chambers, we determined to live from henceforth together, and endeavour, by an aſſiduous application and attendance to all the horſe-races, cock-fights, and tennis-matches in and round London, to pick up a genteel independency. But the billiard-tables were the greateſt recompence for our pains at the preſent, as we ſeldom miſſed being engaged every night, and as frequently carried off conſiderable profits. On theſe occaſions, Raily being a moſt dexterous

dexterous practitioner, I always was employed in bets, while he seldom failed to get the upper-hand by his superior conduct and sagacity.

During these researches, I was surprised to hear him accost me one day in this manner: 'I have been thinking, 'Hamilton, of a very serious affair these 'six weeks; and now I think it is full 'time to put it in practice. This scheme 'will never do for a couple of young 'fellows to live by for any continuance. 'I long to strike a bold stroke at once, 'that may put us above dependance. 'We are blessed with talents that were 'surely calculated for much higher 'purposes, than to skulk about doing 'of nothing; and action, glorious 'action! must be embraced with vi-'gour, and carried on with chearful-'ness and conduct, if we ever entertain a 'thought of arriving above the standard 'of simple Plebeians.'

This

This unexpected ſalute made me conjecture he had ſtill a hankering for the highway, and that he was going to propoſe ſomething of that nature, by his mentioning the word action with ſo much energy; but I was deceived in this opinion, when he went on: 'How would 'you like to repreſent the place of your 'nativity in parliament, jump into the 'chair of a firſt rate ſtate-penſioner, 'and have an opportunity to lead aſſes 'by the ears, as well as another man? 'As for my part, do ye ſee, I ſhould 'think it a very glorious thing to find 'half a ſcore laced beaus of the beſt 'rank, cringing round me; while with 'a wave of my hand, or a toſs of my 'head, I checked the impetuoſity of the 'animals, and obliged them to reſume 'their proper diſtance. I ſay, how 'would you like theſe things?'

I was ſo confounded to hear theſe words uttered in a ſerious mood, that I directly concluded he was run mad, and

and expected every minute to see some alarming symptoms of lunacy, when he continued thus: 'I see plainly you 'either fancy I am distracted, or else 'in a bantering humour; but you are 'mistaken. Nothing is more easy to 'accomplish than this very project in 'question, as thus; You have already 'got some money, which by a proper 'application will produce more. When 'you have got twenty or thirty thou-'sand pounds, you can purchase an 'estate in Scotland, which will entitle 'you to put in for a member in the 'House of Commons. This you can 'carry also by the strength of a little cash. 'When you have once arrived at this 'point, ways and means may be found 'to extend your prospects higher You 'will become a most accomplished ora-'tor; be dignified with some places of 'very great profit and trust, and in the 'course of a few years, arrive at such 'immense treasures, that you can either 'find means to be honoured with a

'title,

'title, or purchaſe it ſlily for a round 'ſum; in which caſe the office of 'prime miniſter muſt inevitably fol-'low, and then you can have an op-'portunity to do for your friends, pu-'niſh your enemies, or ſhew them an 'inſtance of a moſt chriſtian charity, 'by pardoning them with a good grace, 'and be a man of the firſt importance 'in the eyes of the three kingdoms.'

This modeſt gradation from a young fellow of little more than five hundred pounds fortune, to the prime miniſter of Great Britain, was a graſp that ſeemed ſomething calculated for my anticipating imagination; and, notwithſtanding the romantickneſs of ſuch a thought, I conſidered that ſome things, however uncommon, were nevertheleſs true, illuſtrating my opinion with the hiſtory of cardinal Wolſey, and others, who by the concurrence of the ſtars, and indefatigable application, had raiſed themſelves to the higheſt honours; and could

I only

I only get up the ſum of twenty or thirty thouſand pounds, I ſaw no reaſon, why I ſhould not aim my bow as high as another man; let little paltry earth-born animals of reſtrained thoughts, and groveling conceptions, think what they would.

Os hominum ſublime dedit, cælumque tueri
Juſſit; et erectos ad ſidera tollere vultus!

Having convinced myſelf of the practicableneſs of this affair, I turned to Raily, and very compoſedly aſked him, how he propoſed to fetch up the neceſſary ſum to purchaſe the ſeat he mentioned; for that if we could once but arrive at this criſis, I made no queſtion of going through with the reſt.

'Why now, this is doing ſomething 'indeed,' ſays Raily, 'you muſt un-'derſtand, I have laid my plan upon a 'ſolid footing, ſuch as cannot fail in 'the nature of things to ſucceed. It is 'founded

'founded on a rock, my boy, and con-
'ſequently muſt ſtand the moſt obſti-
'nate aſſaults of fortune. You muſt
'know I have been a conſiderable time
'employed in the moſt intricate ſer-
'vices of the fair ſex, eſpecially old
'maids and widows, and by this time
'can take upon me to aver, generally
'ſpeaking, for there is no rule without
'an exception, that I am pretty well
'acquainted with their humours, their
'foibles, and their darling paſſions.
'Yes, I know them, to the experience
'of my whole man. Now this is the
'point. Here you are a very clever
'ſtriking young fellow, with ſhoulders
'like Hercules, and legs truly Caledo-
'nian, juſt turned of twenty, and
'formed for love; what the devil is to
'ſtop you from making your addreſſes
'to ſome ſquinting old maid, or wi-
'dow, with a liquoriſh tooth, an over-
'grown fortune, and a ſhort leaſe of
'mortality? D——n me, don't you
'ſee the thing is already done, as it
'were?

'were? What do you think drove me 'to the highway, but this very argu-'ment? I'll be curſt, if you ſee the 'matter as I do, but the buſineſs is as 'good as done; and Sir Hamilton 'Murray is the word.'

Notwithſtanding I ought to have known better, as I had ſo lately experienced the folly of building caſtles in the air; yet, this ſcheme appeared ſo feaſible, and withal flattered my vanity ſo agreeably, that I ſuffered myſelf to be overcome by the deluſion; and I gave my conſent to his propoſal in a tranſport of joy.

This article being ſettled, there was a neceſſity to lay down a plan of operation, whereby we might come to the knowledge and acquaintance of a proper object, in order to begin buſineſs. The park, the play, and every place of public reſort, was frequented day after day, to no manner of purpoſe; for, though

though we ſaw ſeveral, who by their dreſs appeared fit for the end propoſed, yet, how to get at the ſpeech of them, was the queſtion.

We might have trifled on after this rate till doomſday, had not Raily taken notice, that this game at faſt and looſe was doing of nothing, and obſerved that the likelieſt method to bring our views to bear would be to frequent ſome church, where the ceremony of the hat, the ſnuff-box, or telling the hour of the day by my watch, would be ſo many favourable opportunities for an introduction. I thought this argument extremely ſolid; and after a ſerious conſultation, we found that of all the places in England, Mr. W——d's chapel appeared the beſt adapted, as his female hearers where within a few degrees of lunacy already; and it was only putting on a more ſerious phiz than common, breathing out a few deep aſpirations, by way of ſighs for ſin,

ſin, and you immediately gain their good opinion, which, with a little induſtry, could eaſily be converted into a liking, and all the world knows, that good liking is firſt couſin-german to love.

Accordingly I frequented the chapel in M—f—ds with great aſſiduity, dreſſed very plain, but every thing of the beſt; and after hearing a tedious ſermon interlarded with ſtories quite foreign to the ſubject, had the honour to preſent into the paſtor's own hands at the door-way, a couple of guineas by way of augmenting a contribution he had moſt piouſly ſet on foot, for the relief of our diſtreſſed brethren and fellow-labourers in the vineyard of Georgia.

This conſiderable donation from a beginner did not fail to attract his attention, I was ſhortly after complimented with a ſeat in one of the front-galleries,

galleries, and had the addreſs to paſs in his opinion for a very rich Levant trader, whoſe name I aſſumed on the occaſion..

I went on thus very ſucceſsfully without miſſing a day of preaching, for the ſpace of three weeks; in all which time, though I ſaw a number of females both young and old, yet none upon inquiry proved fit for the purpoſes of this expedition in point of fortune, being generally tradeſmen's wives, citizen's daughters, and ſervant-maids; and while their huſbands, fathers and maſters, were lamenting the hardneſs and dullneſs of the times, and enforcing a more exact œconomy for the future, in order to make both ends meet; they, on the other hand, were ſo engroſſed with ſpiritual concerns, and laying the foundation of a ſet of alm's houſes, by way of ſubſcription, for the poor of the Lord, that no time, leiſure, or thought, was or could be taken of any thing tranſitory.

I be-

I began to be impatient at this delay, as I had already made ſome conſiderable preſents, in order to pave the way to a private conference with the divine, which I was told would be a very good ſtep; when one day a very brilliant equipage drove into the court-yard, from whence an elderly lady alighted, and was uſhered into the dwelling-houſe with the greateſt attendance by the ſervants, and the moſt polite and mannerly complaiſance in their maſter. This ſight gave a new philup to my ſpirits. I conſulted Raily upon the occaſion, who gave it as his real opinion, that this was certainly long-looked-for come at laſt; obſerving, that an old woman, and alone, was an infallible ſign of her being diſengaged; and that very few people kept equipages, who were not at leaſt worth ten thouſand pounds.

I was juſt of the ſame way of thinking, and reſolved to introduce myſelf into her company the very next time ſhe

ſhe came there, by conſulting the miniſter on the obſcurity of a very difficult Scripture text in the Revelation. This I thought I would not fail to do, while he was adminiſtring his ghoſtly admonitions to her in his cloſet, to which place I had frequent acceſs.

The very next day I had an opportunity to put my deſign in practice. The equipage appeared a ſecond time, which imparted more joy to my tranſported heart than is conceivable; and juſt allowing her time enough to be ſeated, I knocked at the door, and deſired to be introduced to the doctor. The ſervant, who had already taſted my bounty on ſeveral occaſions, opened the paſſage with the greateſt civility, and uſhered me into the cloſet, where I pretended great confuſion at ſeeing the doctor engaged, and made a motion to withdraw; but he prevented this ſtep by calling out, 'My worthy friend,

'don't go away; pray ſtep in, and I 'will give you a ſight of ſome experi-'mental philoſophy, which no doubt 'will entertain you greatly.'

So ſaying, he drew out an apparatus upon wheels, which he obſerved was an electrical machine, very neceſſary for promoting the circulation of the blood in all perſons whoſe minds were elevated above the concerns of this ſinful world, and conſequently could not take ſuch care of their health as the carnal man. 'In this caſe,' ſays he, 'it 'gives a ſpur to the lazy ſpirits, new 'braces the nerves, and invigorates and 'enlivens the whole fabrick.'

While I was admiring this wonderful inſtance of the ſagacity of man in producing elementary fire, he very gallantly placed the lady in an armed chair, and, with his own hands, ſet her feet upon a ſort of cuſhion, at the ſame time putting

putting a rod of metal into her hands, which, he ſaid, muſt be a means of conveying the ſhock upon the body. 'I 'profeſs Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'though I have 'gone through this operation ſo often, 'I cannot help being ſhocked immode-'rately at your ſolemnity; there is 'ſomething ſo ſhocking in a perſon's 'being ſhocked ſo frequently, with the 'repetition of the word ſhock, that it 'ſhocks one moſt fearfully, and I am 'at this juncture now actually moſt 'ſhockingly frightened.'

I believe it would have been abſolutely impoſſible for me to have remained another minute without diſplaying evident tokens of riſibility at this firſt ſpeech of my intended bride, had not the doctor called off my attention, by begging me to give the wheel a few turns round, in order to raiſe the elementary heat by friction. This office I flattered myſelf I performed pretty

dexterouſly; for in a moment he bid his patient only touch the machine, and it produced a concuſſion of her whole frame. She repeated this ſeveral times, till her ghoſtly director was pleaſed to cry out, 'ſatis bene placito.'

On which I took the ſeat, and went through a courſe of very alarming operations, to the great mirth of the lady, who had now recovered her ſpirits to a miracle, and rallied me very agreeably on my awkward fearfulneſs, obſerving, that I muſt be very little acquainted with the nature of ſhocks, to be ſhocked at ſo trifling a beginning; while the doctor took occaſion to inſinuate, that this was one of thoſe wonderful works of nature, which was too nice for our finite conceptions to comprehend ſufficiently, but that we ſhould have an ample ſcope of a never-ending eternity to explore the moſt noble productions of God, after our impriſoned ſouls

ſhould

hould have diſengaged themſelves from he fetters of mortality, and aſcended he manſions of the ſaints above.

So ſaying, we all three went out inging of pſalms, to the infinite ſurpriſe if my friend Raily, who had ſtationed imſelf within hearing, with a view of econnoitring the old lady, and who ook us for ſo many inhabitants of Bedlam.

CHAP. III.

I attend chapel with freſh aſſiduity.—Ingratiate myſelf into the good graces of the old lady, who invites me home with her to drink tea.—Am tranſported at the ſplendor of her apartment, and make ſome high encomiums on her beauty.—Begin a grand movement, but am fruſtrated by the unſeaſonable intruſion of her footman.—She returns me the compliment of a viſit at my houſe, where I accompliſh part of my deſign by a ſingular method.—Am rendered the happieſt of men.

WHEN we had got into the fields, in which moſt of our conſultations were exhibited, Raily aſked me what the devil was the matter we came out braying like ſo many jack-aſſes? On which I told him, we were ſinging of pſalms.

'Pſalms!

'Pſalms!' ſays he, 'do you call 'that ſinging of pſalms? I am ſure it 'was more like the lamentations of 'Hob in the Well than church-muſic. 'For my part, I began to think the 'doctor had turned your brains in good 'earneſt, and was preparing to call him 'to an account for depriving the com-'monwealth of a very able ſtateſman.' This obſervation made us quite merry. I related the circumſtances of the cloſet conference, verbatim; at which he laughed heartily, and obſerved, we were in a fair way of doing buſineſs by that very tranſaction.

In order to carry on our projects the better, it was thought neceſſary to take a footman in livery directly, and alſo have lodgings in the city; but upon ſecond thoughts, a houſe would do much better, in order to keep up appearances, and be ſecured from the prying eyes of an inquiſitive family, who might, perhaps, entertain ſome thoughts which

were not proper to be indulged at this juncture. With this view, we pitched upon a very ſmall, but neat box, ready furniſhed, not far from the centre of the city, which I found means to enter upon immediately.

There was ſtill another article wanting which was very material. This was no other than ſome female in the houſe who ſhould paſs for a very near relation, which Raily undertook to furniſh me with, and at the ſame time one who knew how to behave herſelf to the beſt advantage. The perſon who was to ſupply the place of my ſiſter on this occaſion, was a girl of the town, whom my companion had known a long time, and could ſham modeſty to a miracle.

All this time I was not idle, but took care to attend the chapel as much as ever, and never failed to do my duty at the wheel, whenever the old lady was diſpoſed to be electrified; by which means

means I inſinuated myſelf ſo far into her confidence and favour, that ſhe one day invited me home with her to drink tea. Glad of this lucky opportunity, by which I thought my buſineſs as good as done, I aſſented to her obliging offer with vaſt joy, and had the pleaſure to be carried home with her in her chariot.

All the way going along, I took occaſion every now and then to obſerve, that Mr. W——d was certainly an immediate gift from heaven, in order to draw mankind into the true thorough-fare of ſaving-grace. His bounty, his unparalleled charity, were my univerſal theme; and that it was no ſmall addition to his happineſs, to be attended by ſo worthy, God-fearing, and agreeable a lady as I then had the honour to be in company with, which, I took notice, was ſuch an encouragement to people of lower character in life, that it made

his admonitions and doctrine be received and digeſted with tenfold energy.

This did not fail to have a moſt happy effect. I found the epithet 'agreeable' tickled her darling paſſion exceedingly; and ſhe, in return for my compliment, gave me to underſtand, that it was a very pleaſing ſight to all good followers of the righteous to ſee a youth of my years ſo admirably captivated with the luſtre of divine things; and, for her part, ſhe had conceived a very great liking to my morals, ever ſince her firſt ſeeing me in the cloſet.

I was tranſported at theſe words, and was in the midſt of a very eloquent harangue, ſetting forth the power of beauty, ſeaſoned with womanhood, and enlarged by experience, which, I ſaid, could not fail to render her the delight of the man who ſhould be ſo happy as to engage her attention, inſtead of the ſilly, trifling allurements of a baby girl, which

which none but boys, fools, and madmen could be taken with, when we ſtopt at a large pair of gates, and I was obliged to break off my diſcourſe for that time, in order to hand my partner out of the chariot, which I did in a very gallant manner.

But if I was in raptures before, I was ten times more ſo at finding myſelf uſhered into a very ſumptuous and elegant apartment by a footman in livery, who ſhortly after brought in the tea-equipage, and retired.

I now thought I was a made man indeed. I had juſt taken a look of the houſe, and found it was a very large one in a capital ſtreet; and as to certain females, which I ſaw in the ſeveral apartments as I went up ſtairs, I conjectured they muſt certainly be ſo many upper-ſervants, or companions to the lady.

Elated

Elated at theſe ſymptoms of ſurrounding grandeur, I ſet her down in my opinion as a firſt rate fortune, and reſolved to cultivate the preſent minutes to the beſt advantage. With this thought I took the opportunity of our being alone during the tea, to re-aſſume the ſequel of my oration in the coach by breaking out with, Yes, madam, the man who ſhall be ſo happy as to ſecure the affections of ſo fine a lady, need give himſelf no farther trouble about worldly affairs. He may then look round without envy upon the greateſt monarchs upon earth, and make good the old proverb, "I have "one, part the reſt among you." Here he may have beauty without paint, modeſty without affectation, humility without pride, love without meaſure, and godlineſs without ſuperſtition. Can any thing be more raviſhing, more tranſporting, or more delightful, than for a man to be aided in his reſearches by ſo pious and ſo learned a partner?

partner? Here he has a ſure guide to the paths of happineſs, and a pleaſing check to the ſallies of youth; and when his ſpirit is tired with the ardors attending theſe operations of his duty with regard to things ſpiritual, he may then unbend his fatigued mind from ſuch ſtudies, by taſting in the arms of the fineſt woman in the world, thoſe tranſporting pleaſures which carnal minds can have no idea of, and none but the choſen few are permitted to know.

'O dear Sir,' replied the lady, highly pleaſed with what I had ſaid, 'you 'are the beſt bred young gentleman I 'ever ſaw, and were I diſpoſed to va-'nity, ſhould actually think you had 'diſcovered ſomething extraordinary 'about my perſon to occaſion theſe 'encomiums; but as I am not ſo ſelf-'conceited, muſt conclude you are un-'der ſome miſtake, in thus flattering a 'woman upwards of thirty-five.'

Twenty-

Twenty-five you mean, Madam, or rather twenty-one, replied I. Is that native bloom, which by its tranſparent luſtre ſhines ſo conſpicuous over your angelical countenance, a denomination of thirty-five? No, no, dear Madam, give me leave to aſſure you, there muſt be a very great error in ſuch calculation. In theſe caſes, nature is the beſt index, who plainly points out to every ſpectator, that you are very far on this ſide thirty. It is only being bleſſed with a glance of thoſe lovely eyes, whoſe humid rays excel the ſun in radiance, and thoſe delicious lips, whoſe very touch might tranſport a hermit to diſtraction, to convince us of the truth of this obſervation.

Having expreſſed myſelf in this manner, I got up, and begging pardon for my boldneſs, hoped ſhe would attribute it to my uncommon zeal for her perſon,

perſon, and moſt humbly implored her to be ſo gracious as to indulge me in the happineſs of a chaſte ſalute, that ſo I might convince myſelf of the reality of what my eyes had never been ſo happy as to have ſeen before. So ſaying, I raviſhed a kiſs from her once ruddy lips, which I repeated ſo often, that the old lady's breath began to beat an alarm to yet untaſted raptures very ſenſibly, and I do not know how far we might have loſt ourſelves in theſe pleaſing tumults of the ſenſes, had not we been arouſed from carrying matters to greater maturity by the ſound of her footman's tread upon the ſtairs, who very unſeaſonably paid us a viſit, in order to repleniſh the tea-kettle.

This interruption put a final ſtop to any farther operations for that night. I had worked myſelf up into ſo great a fermentation of ſpirits, by placing my eye upon ſome ſilver plate on a ſide-board,

board, that I might have done great things at ſuch a juncture; but being once recovered from this reverie, I could not for the ſoul of me go through with it again on any account. As to my partner, ſhe pretended great confuſion at my freedoms; but I found means to pacify her by proteſting, he would be leſs than man who could ſtand the artillery of her fair eyes, and not be ſtruck with the moſt tranſporting ſenſations. An obſervation of this nature could not fail to make my peace in a minute: ſhe aſſumed a moſt chearful behaviour, and rendered herſelf ſo ridiculous by affecting the childiſh humours of fifteen, that I could ſcarce refrain from laughing.

I now thought, that, conſidering it was my firſt viſit, I ought to be ſatisfied with the advances I had made, and it would be decent to withdraw, which I ſoon after did; but not before I had obtained

obtained her promiſe to favour me with her delightful company the next evening, when I obſerved my ſiſter would be very much delighted to find herſelf bleſſed with the converſation of ſo accompliſhed and amiable a young lady.

When I went home, and imparted the news of this converſation to Raily, and that I had been within an ace of giving the old woman a very convincing mark of my affection, he damned the footman very cordially; but comforted himſelf for this unavoidable accident, by crying out, 'Tip her the faddle, 'd—n me, tip her the faddle. By the 'lord Harry! it is the only thing in the 'world to trip up her heels decently 'once or ſo, and you gain her heart 'for ever. Didn't I ſay, you would be 'a parliament-man preſently? By J—s! 'I begin to have ſome very promiſing 'hopes of acting myſelf the part of 'under-treaſurer to the Exchequer: 'O!

'O! how I ſhould like to be fingering 'the ſhiners!'

I then told him, that ſhe was to pay me a viſit on the morrow evening; and in order to make the better figure, I went to a ſilver-ſmith, and got the uſe of a very handſome ſervice of gadrooned plate, for which I left the value and a large conſideration. Being furniſhed out in every reſpect, I waited very impatiently for her arrival, and in due time was relieved from my anxiety by her coach ſtopping at my door; on which, with the greateſt agility, I ruſhed down ſtairs, and handed my viſitor ſo adroitly into a lower parlour, that I perceived my manner of proceeding had charmed her not a little.

My ſiſter now came in and ſaluted her very prettily; obſerving, that ſhe could not be ſufficiently thankful for the happineſs of this mark of ſo fine a lady's

lady's regard to her brother, in honouring his houſe with her preſence, and begged to be numbered among thoſe happy people whom ſhe favoured with the bleſſings of her friendſhip, from which there muſt certainly flow very many advantages. This ſpeech far ſurpaſſed my hopes, and did not fail to anſwer the purpoſe exceedingly. The old lady made her a moſt gracious anſwer, and the tea and wit flew about ſurprifingly.

I was in a great dilemma how to get my pretended ſiſter out of the room, that I might be at liberty to improve the minutes to the beſt advantage; but I needed not have been ſo fearful, for the dear girl knew her buſineſs better than that came to: for, after begging a million of pardons for the rudeneſs of leaving a lady ſhe honoured ſo much, pleaded an abſolute pre-engagement, which there could be no avoiding, and uſing

using abundance of apologies, and severely chiding me for my neglect in not giving her timely notice of this honour, left the room ſoon after.

This was doing of buſineſs to ſome purpoſe. I approached my viſitor with eagerneſs, and began to exhibit ſuch flowers of love-rhetorick as ſet her blood in a moſt pleaſurable circulation. Theſe ſort of diſorders were ſo new to her, that ſhe was abſolutely at a loſs for their meaning, otherwiſe than from the good effects of electricity, which naturally led her to talk of Mr. W——d's machine.

I now thought this a very lucky opportunity to effect my purpoſe; and with this view I told her, that I did not at all approve of giving the human conſtitution ſuch unnatural ſhocks as he every day practiſed upon his patients; that repetitions of ſuch kind wore

wore out the elaſtick ſpringineſs of the fibres, and relaxed the nerves of the brain, even to a degree of lunacy; whereas I had a far nobler method of operation for the cure of low ſpirits, which, without diſtreſſing the ſolids, or overpowering the human fabrick with violence, imparted all the aſſiſtance that could be expected from the moſt experienced phyſician, and at the ſame time tranſported the ſoul of the patient with ſuch extatic pleaſures as were incomprehenſible to any one who never had made trial of the powerful wonders of its influence. It chears the ſpirits, ſays I, brightens up the ſenſes, comforts the brain and nerves, and enlivens the underſtanding to comprehend ſtrange myſteries. It furniſhes the ſtomach with a moſt incredible digeſtion, enriches the memory with the faculties of retention in a wonderful manner, even ſo as to be continually pondering upon its ocult qualities, and longing for a return of its appli-

application, and, by its never-failing energy, ſets the whole fluids in a ſtate of fermentation. And whereas other machines muſt be confined to cloſets for their bulk, this on the contrary is ſo ſizeable that it is every day carried with eaſe about the perſon; and what is the beſt recommendation in the world, it is the immediate gift of heaven. But though it is common to all men, yet it is not every one who knows how to prepare it for action in a ſatisfactory manner.

'Bleſs me, Sir,' ſays my viſitor, 'this is a very wonderful machine you 'ſpeak of: I profeſs I never yet heard 'of the like, and ſhould be glad to 'be electrified with ſuch a powerful 'apparatus.'

'Madam,' ſaid I, 'I will not fail to 'obey your commands preſently: you 'need be under no apprehenſion as to 'its effects; it runs much upon the 'ſame

'ſame principles with the doctor's, only 'with this difference, that whereas his 'method is attended with a moſt diſ-'agreeable ſhock to the body, this of 'mine is accompanied with a ſenſation 'ſo delightful, that it will be abſolutely 'impoſſible for you to recollect your 'ſituation for a few ſeconds of time.'

'Lord! Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'produce 'this mighty machine you talk of; I 'am in raptures at its admirable quali-'ties, and foreſee, I ſhall have frequent 'uſe for ſo powerful a ſpecifick to my 'conſtitution.'

I was willing to work up her conceit of it to the higheſt, in order to cut off all retreat upon its production, and alſo to give time to my own fancy to bring the engine to its proper bearance, and proceeded thus: 'Well might the 'worthy doctor launch out into the 'praiſes of electricity, and the power-'ful

'ful laws of friction! it is the grand 'movement of nature; the firſt prin-'ciple of perpetual motion; it reple-'niſhes the world with living creatures 'of every denomination, and gives mor-'tals a proſpect of the joys of immor-'tality. The ſeas are full of its won-'ders, the air of its miracles, and every 'buſh, twig, branch, leaf, and ſhamble 'ſings aloud the praiſes of its infinite 'perfection.'

I was going on thus at a wonderful rate, when her impatience was raiſed ſo high, that nothing would ſerve her turn but to be electrified directly; on which I was obliged to leave off my encomiums, to enhance her belief of it by ocular demonſtration, and the teſtimony and evidence of the ſweeteſt of the five ſenſes. This I did ſo effectually before we parted, that ſhe confeſſed in a kind of extatic confuſion, ſhe had never been ſo agreeably electrified in her life time; but

id me very ſeverely for taking vantage over her credulity, which nan had done before.

s very much diſpoſed to believe teſtations in that article to be e, as I had all the reaſon in the to flatter myſelf, I had electri- maid, though ſomewhat of the , and alſo, by the experiment, d the doctor of one of his moſt rable and beſt patients.

CHAP. IV.

Impart the news of my ſucceſs to Raily.—He is entranced at the proſpects before us.—I invite the lady to Chelſea in a four-wheeled chaiſe.—Propoſe marriage, which ſhe conſents to.—Make mention of a very pompous ſettlement, which produces a moſt ſhocking diſcovery.—Find the foundation of all my hopes to be grounded on a trifling annuity.—Break up the correſpondence in high dudgeon.

SHE was no ſooner gone, than I called down Raily, and acquainted him, that I had very happily brought matters to bear beyond my moſt ſanguine expectations; that, under the appearance of bracing my viſitor's nerves by electricity, I had found means to ſecure her affections in the moſt prevailing manner, by firſt bracing and then relaxing my own, and that

that I intended to marry her in a few days. He was almoſt diſtracted with joy at theſe tidings, applauded my method of procedure to the ſkies, and obſerved, that ſuch talents as mine could not fail to render me the wonder of the age I lived in, when I ſhould have an opportunity to diſpenſe their luſtre to mankind in a more exalted ſphere.

To ſay the truth, I began to have a wonderful opinion of my own ſagacity and conduct ſince the completion of this affair. I thought no woman could ſtand againſt the force of my attacks, and with great pleaſure indulged myſelf in the contemplation of the golden proſpects before me.

I will no ſooner, ſaid I, be in the actual poſſeſſion of this money, which, moderately ſpeaking, cannot be leſs than thirty thouſand pounds, than I will finiſh what my claſſical education has begun. I will ſtudy the cuſtoms, manners, and

conſtitution of my own country with great accuracy, that I may be the better enabled to judge of the ſtate of our affairs, with regard to our political connections on the continent. I will get juſt as much inſight into the law, as to enable me to ward off the fraudulent inſinuations of ſharpers; and while I am accompliſhing myſelf in the neceſſary qualifications of a gentleman, can ſerve my country in the character of a juſtice of the peace upon occaſion. As to languages, I am pretty well verſed in them. Latin I have at my fingers ends; Greek I am tolerably acquainted with, and French is my darling amuſement: not from any affection to the country, but becauſe I think it the moſt polite and flowery language in chriſtendom. Being furniſhed with all theſe neceſſary acquirements, I will then make the grand tour. I will contract a correſpondence at moſt of the courts of Europe, to gain the more inſight into the nature and ſyſtem of politicks. I will examine

examine every thing curious abroad, that I may be the better qualified to judge, as to the veracity of our authors, who have treated of thoſe things. During my progreſs through Italy, I will ſtudy the arts with great aſſiduity, that I may no longer be a dupe to a ſet of ſcoundrels, by throwing away my money to acquire the title of a virtuoſo. I will take care to furniſh myſelf with ſuch original curioſities, as ſhall not fail to eſtabliſh my reputation for taſte on my arrival in old England. By this time, my wife will be dead; as what the devil ſhould a woman of her years do out of heaven ſo long. This will be a moſt happy releaſement. I will fall in love with and marry ſome lady of the firſt quality, by whoſe influence I ſhall be repreſented to his Majeſty as a young gentleman of the moſt natural and acquired qualifications to ſerve my country in an exalted ſtation. I ſhall be careſſed at court; my company and converſation will be looked upon as the higheſt favour.

by the prime of the land; and I ſhall be courted by the wiſe, the great, the rich and opulent, as a moſt uncommon genius. I will increaſe in wiſdom as in years; and by that time I get to the age of forty, ſhall be deemed the fitteſt perſon in England to be truſted with the adminiſtration of affairs under our moſt gracious Sovereign.

'Why now,' ſaid **Raily, who had** liſtened to theſe reveries with great attention, 'why now, this is what I have 'been aiming at all this time. You 'pretended to laugh at my ladder of 'aſcenſion; but can any thing be more 'plain and practicable? Let us go on 'fair and ſoftly —— no more to our 'hearts than we can decently kick off 'with our heels. Yes, yes, I find we 'are made men, and our buſineſs is 'three parts done; and for why? han't 'we already entered upon poſſeſſion? 'and that you know is three points of 'the law. Only lay hands upon the

'the rhino, and we can then proceed 'as we pleaſe.'

In conſequence of this it was reſolved, that I ſhould fulfil my engagements as to viſiting the lady next day, and lay down propoſals of marriage, on the carpet forthwith: but upon ſecond thoughts it was reckoned more expedient to provide myſelf with a licence at Doctors Commons; and, for fear of ſome other unlucky intruſion, beſpeak her company to ſome of the neighbouring villages, ſuch as Chelſea, Batterſea, or Wandſworth, to dinner on the following day, where I could have an opportunity to ſound the depth of her finances, and the feelings of her pulſe the more effectually.

Accordingly it was thought proper to ſtay away all that day, in order to whet her impatience the better for a ſecond interview; but beſpeak her company to the foregoing pleaſurable ex-

curſion on the morrow, where I would do myſelf the honour to attend her in a four-wheeled chaiſe. This I immediately performed by detaching my footman with a very elegant billet, ſetting forth my unhappineſs in being deprived of the tranſporting pleaſure of her company for ſo long an age, and begging her conſent to my requeſt of attending her to Chelſea the next morning. To this I received a moſt ſatisfactory anſwer, intimating her conſent to my propoſals, and that ſhe would be ready by one; aſſuring me withal, that nothing but the exceeding deſire ſhe had to hear the doctor upon a favourite text, ſhould have moved her to appoint ſo late an hour; for, ſaving the unſpeakable delight which was conveyed to her ſoul by the healing words of that choſen miniſter, ſhe had never experienced ſuch heavenly feelings as when in my company.

Tranſported at this freſh inſtance of her approbation, by which I found my laſt night's tranſaction had been taken in

in good part, I reſolved to throw off the ſaint altogether, and next morning put on a moſt brilliant dreſs, aſſiſted by the confidence and preſumption of a firſt rate beau, which I thought could not fail to render my converſation tenfold agreeable.

When I went out, I left Raily fully perſuaded of my bringing matters to a happy concluſion before I came back: for at my departure I heard him cry, 'A very frolickſome old woman this, 'by J—s; but all's one for that: be 'ſure to tip her the ſaddle.'

I had ordered my ſervant to bring the chaiſe to Buckingham-gate, whither we ſoon after arrived in a hackney-coach; and as I did not chooſe to be overheard, I ſent the fellow home again about his buſineſs.

After expatiating on her great condeſcention in honouring me with her agreeable company in this jaunt, I took

occaſion to aſſume the buſineſs in hand by addreſſing her thus:

You cannot imagine, Madam, the pleaſures I feel in being ſo near the only lady in the world, for whom I could ever entertain the leaſt favourable idea. Yes, before I had the good fortune to explore the maſterpiece of nature in the contemplation of your wonderful perfections, I may ſafely ſay, without derogating from veracity, that all the ſex were indifferent to me: but no ſooner did chance, or rather I have reaſon to ſay propitious fortune, throw me in your way, and I had an opportunity to experience to a reality what my moſt ſanguine imagination could never have ſuggeſted, then, indeed, the caſe was greatly altered! I no longer beheld woman with indifference; a ſtrange and uncommon ardour poſſeſſed my ſpirits; my blood was thrilled to extaſy with the moſt raviſhing delights, and I found, in ſpite

of

ſ myſelf, that my heart, hitherto un-eſtrained as air, was now a cloſe pri-oner; and, being tired of its former naſter, has taken refuge in your ange-ical boſom, from whence I have no opes of recovering it, unleſs I ſhould e ſo happy as to engage your mutual eturn of love. That this is my ſitua-ion, I have no longer reaſon to doubt; or, upon your leaſt approach, an uni-erſal tremor ſeizes me, alternate floods f joy, grief, hope and deſpair fill my reaſt in a viciſſitude of alarming per-urbations; and I am quickly convinced o my woeful experience, that, without ou, I muſt be for ever miſerable.—— Now, dear Madam, as the caſe ſtands, nd in conſideration that the happineſs r miſery of a fellow-creature is highly nterested by your anſwer, will you be o condeſcending as to intimate your nind on this occaſion? Have I reaſon o hope you will favour my attachment y marriage? Can I indulge myſelf in he delightful proſpect of ſpending my future

future days in the company of ſo amiable a lady? If your anſwer ſhould prove agreeable to my wiſhes, in the name of heaven impart it ſomehow by a ſign, a nod, or ſome ſecret intimation of conſenting love, leſt my grateful heart, taking the alarm at the propitious accent of your tongue, ſhould communicate the joyful tidings too ſuddenly to my enraptured ſoul, which, being ſtrung to the higheſt verge of extaſy, might take that opportunity to overleap the bounds of mortality, and lay me dead at your feet.

Having finiſhed this unnatural rapſody, which had almoſt exhauſted my breath, I had reaſon to believe my loving partner was indeed under ſome apprehenſions of overpowering my ſpirits by a too haſty declaration in my behalf, for ſhe only favoured me with a ſmile and a conſenting nod.

Being ſatisfied in this intereſting point, I aſſumed a moſt chearful behaviour,

aviour, talked to her as to a perſon who as to be my wife that very night, and roduced the licence accordingly. She as very far from being diſpleaſed at iis inſtance of my celerity; and gave ie to know I was the only man in ie world, who had ever made an im-reſſion upon her heart.

Was ever any thing ſo tranſporting! ſurveyed the numerous equipages paſ-ig to and fro with abundance of con-mpt, concluding I ſhould ſoon have in my power to ſhew the world one r ſuperior to any of them, and alight-g at the beſt houſe of entertainment the place, called up the maſter, and ſpoke an elegant dinner.

While this was preparing, and we ere exhilarating our ſpirits over a glaſs wine, I was ſtrangely anxious to be certained of the ſum and extent of my od fortune, and languiſhed impatient-to hear her pronounce the words,

'Thirty

'Thirty thouſand pounds.' But that I might communicate this joyful news to my throbbing heart, without deviating from good manners, I began to talk of her ſettlement in very pompous ſtrains.

I will, Madam, ſays I, ſo ſoon as I can conſult my lawyer, draw up a ſettlement entitling you to a proviſion of eight hundred a year. I intend this ſhall iſſue out of a very conſiderable eſtate I have lately purchaſed in Derbyſhire; for, though I am originally a Scotſman, and have great poſſeſſions there, yet, by my mother's ſide, I am allied to the moſt eminent families in England.

Then, as the notion of pin-money ſtill reigns among the polite, I intend to preſent you with the additional ſum of two-hundred more per annum: for I would by no means have my deareſt love imagine or ſuppoſe, that the name of

of a wife ſhall be the leaſt reſtraint from the indulgence of all thoſe diverſions and amuſements which ſhe enjoyed while ſhe attracted the longing eyes of mankind, when under the character of a moſt blooming maid.

I was going on thus very gallantly in appropriating ſuch and ſuch lands and cattle, interſperſed through my eſtates in Lincolnſhire, Staffordſhire, Cornwal, and Buckinghamſhire, all which I intended to make Raily jumble together upon parchment in the way of a ſettlement, and under the appearance of a lawyer, for and towards her ſole uſe and convenience; when ſhe gave a very conſiderable check to my proceedings by crying out, 'Lord! my dear Sir, what ſhall I do with theſe hundreds and thouſands you ſpeak of? It is enough for me, that I poſſeſs your love and a decent maintenance, without being burdened with all theſe loads of gold you mention. I have always

'always hitherto been content with the 'moderate annuity of one hundred and 'fifty pounds, and have boarded and 'lodged for theſe ſeven years in the 'ſame worthy family I live now with, 'where I have every thing heart can 'wiſh or eye deſire, with the uſe of 'either coach or chariot upon occaſion; 'ſo what great need can I have for all 'theſe ſettlements you talk of? No, 'no, any thing will content me, and, 'as I obſerved before, your love is 'ſufficient.'

I was ſo confounded at hearing her talk of boarding in anothers houſe, as I had taken it for granted, the whole had been her own property, that a cold damp ſweat bedewed my face at ſo unexpected a diminution of my fortune; but as the little ſhe had as yet ſaid, did not ſufficiently prove what my fears ſuggeſted, I re-aſſumed my ſpirits, and went on: But then, Madam, what ſhall we do with the thirty thouſand

ſand pounds? Do you think I can be capable of acting a mean part by a lady whom I honour ſo much, and who is to bring me ſo much money? Touch no more upon that ſtring, dear Lady, I do beſeech you. No, no, be aſſured the matter muſt not be as you ſay, for my love will not ſuffer it.

'What thirty thouſand pounds, Sir,' ſaid ſhe in ſtrange confuſion, 'are 'you ſpeaking of? I know of no ſuch 'ſum, unleſs it is in your own poſſeſ-'ſion.'

No, Madam? replied I, why, the thirty or forty thouſand pounds bank-ſtock, or India bonds in your cabinet—what elſe do you think I could mean? Do you imagine, I will accept of ſuch a ſum without an equivalent? forbid it heavens! and ye winged inhabitants of the groves, cherup out your deteſtation, in the moſt croaking ſtrains, if I am conſenting to it. No, no, Madam, I am

I am a man of too nice honour to be guilty of so mean a thing. But you are trying me all this time; and it is a good thought; a lucky stroke of humour in such cases comes in with a double relish; and I am rejoyced to see you are so merrily disposed; it is a good sign.

'I am afraid, Sir,' says she, bursting into tears, 'it is a bad sign to one 'of us. You have built your hopes 'upon my imaginary fortune, and I 'upon your well dissembled love; but 'I now find, we are both woefully de-'ceived: for all my dependance con-'sists in an annuity for life of one 'hundred and fifty pounds per annum, 'with which I lodge and board my-'self to my satisfaction in the family 'you saw me in, and as I have been 'so long in the house, am indulged 'with the use of every thing as if it 'was my own: but now there is an end 'to all my flattering dreams of bliss

And

and I am the moſt unhappy wretch alive."

Had the devil appeared before my eyes at this juncture upon the point of a broomſtick, or upon the point of any thing elſe, or immediate annihilation, in the form of a death-warrant, it could not have imparted more ſhocking ſenſations than theſe words conveyed thro' my whole vital frame. To ſee an end to all my gay proſpects in one moment, was a moſt intolerable ſtroke; and yet no more than I deſerved for carrying matters thus far, without having better grounds for my hope, than what my anticipating fancy had ſuggeſted. I ſtamped, raved, and ſwore alternately, and with a horrible viſage demanded to know in a thundering tone, what buſineſs ſhe had to ride in a chariot to deceive young fellows with an outſide glare of pomp, when ſhe very well knew ſhe had not ſufficiency to ſupport it? and added,

that

that as I had been ſome ſcores of pounds out of pocket by this exploit, I poſitively expected to be re-imburſed.

'And who ſhall re-imburſe me,' ſaid ſhe in a tranſport of tears, 'who ſhall 'reimburſe me for my precious honour, 'ſacrifice a ſacrifice to the villany of be-'traying man?'

This queſtion brought me to myſelf in an inſtant. I ſaw it was not only mean, but highly ungenerous to treat any woman ſo; far more one whom I had already ſo groſsly deceived: ſo I even reſolved to put the beſt face upon the matter poſſible, and come off as well as I could. With this intent I turned towards her, and with a ſmiling countenance told her, we had ſufficiently tormented each other; that I had ſet on foot this altercation on purpoſe to know the depth of her love, which I now was ſatisfied muſt be very great, ſince

ſince ſhe had not reſented what would have been a temptation for any other woman to revenge to the uttermoſt; and, in a word, I plyed my part ſo well, that, by the influence of a few kiſſes, I ſet all to rights again; and by the time that dinner came upon the table, we had reduced ourſelves to a tolerable compoſure.

All this interval I was debating within my mind, whether, as matters were circumſtanced, I had not even better put up with the old lady, rather than let the affair drop and produce nothing. I conſidered, her annuity of one hundred and fifty pounds would ſupport me decently; and, as I had been ſo fruitleſsly engaged in the purſuit of a public office, ſuppoſe I ſhould look upon her in the light of a private office, and her income as my ſalary? where was the mighty difference? Had not I better have the command of a good ſociable

rable old woman, and be master of my own time, than be tied down to the confinement of so many hours in the day to a stamp-office, or a place of the like kind? But then again, as I was in no immediate want, what a gaul it must be to me to put up with a trifling annuity, and an old woman, when I might be happy in the love of some young lady of beauty, birth, and fortune? What! whispered I to myself, shall I be the tool to an old woman's —— for less a title? Heaven forefend! Indeed I was far from impossible, considering my natural complexion, but I might some time or other be in love in good earnest, or have an opportunity to make my fortune in a pleasing manner, and then such a stumbling block as she in the way, would set me mad; for I even resolved to keep her in spirits till I got her safely home, and never see her more.

Full

Full of this thought, I kept up my good humour as high as poſſible; and paying for the dinner, which I reſolved ſhould be the laſt in her company, I handed her into the chaiſe; and, pretending to have dropped the licence out of my pocket, carried her ſafe to London, where I took my leave of her very lovingly, after having promiſed to call early the next morning in order to fulfil my promiſe of marriage.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Go home in a tranſport of rage, and communicate my ill ſucceſs to Raily.—He is ſorely vexed at the diſappointment, and exhibits an inſtance of his Iriſh fidelity by decamping with one hundred pounds of my money.—I meet my old clubmate the poet, and reſolve to commence author.—He introduces me to an aſſembly of the brotherhood in the vicinity of Lincoln's-inn fields.—A ſtrange diſcovery is made by one of the members, which lays the foundation for a curious pamphlet.—The importance of a fact diſcuſſed upon a new principle.

ALL the way going home I was exceſſively chagrined at the thought that after all the time and expence which had attended this project, and the ſanguine hopes I had entertained of making

making my fortune thereby, the affair ſhould come to nothing at laſt.

I had hardly entered within doors, before Raily, full of the pleaſing hopes of hearing that our marriage was over by this time, and the ſum and extent of her fortune, addreſſed me with, 'Well, 'Sir Hamilton, how d'ye like your 'purchaſe? Don't you think your 'bride a match for you at the old 'game? Yes, yes, I warrant her; let 'her alone for that. Well! and was 'ſhe not vaſtly low-ſpirited the whole 'day, and continually wiſhing for the 'other ſtroke from your electric ma-'chine! But, fair and eaſy now, boy! 'She muſt experience in her turn a 'little fluctuation of fortune, and ſtudy 'times and ſeaſons, d'ye ſee. Well, 'you remember our agreement, ten per 'cent you know — not a doit too much 'for the cares and pains, the anxious 'days and ſleepleſs nights I have had 'on this occaſion. — Let me ſee — ay,

'thirty thouſand pounds, at ten per 'cent, make juſt three thouſand to 'your very humble ſervant.—Well, if 'I don't upon the ſtrength of ſuch a 'bottom ——'

He was going on at a violent rate in appropriating ſuch and ſuch ſums of this imaginary acquiſition, to their ſeveral uſes, when I thought proper to put a ſtop to his career a little, by obſerving we were not married.

At this unwelcome tidings he ſtarted back in manifeſt confuſion; and ſtaring me in the face, exclaimed with great earneſtneſs, 'Not married! d'ye ſay? 'the devil you an't!' Then, after a little pauſe, 'Well, but — what — you 'have put it off till to-morrow then, 'have you?' I replied, I was ſo far from having any intention of marrying her to-morrow, that I ſhould give myſelf no farther trouble about the matter, as ſhe was an impoſtor, and had no fortune.

'A

ery likely ſtory this, indeed,'
ıe, 'to tell me a cock and a
ory, about an impoſtor, and
ot, when I ſaw her but yeſter-
her chariot and bays, and a
otman behind! So, now you
rought matters to a criſis, you
o fob me off with ſome ſuch
; five hundred pieces, whereas
nake it appear, look ye, that
iginal agreement was ten per
r the whole tote.'

d not help laughing at this ex-
ıry inſtance of his modeſty, and
n a detail of the whole parti-
at which he was loſt in amaze-
but after a little recollection,
l to marry her himſelf, by way
ıge, and diſpoſe of her annuity
: ſtock-broker at ſeven years
e, which, ſays he, will be a pret-
l of money in my pocket.

This ungenerous propoſal ſhocked me. I aſked him, if he would make no ſcruple to ruin an innocent woman by leaving her a prey to indigence and want, while he rioted away her fortune at a brothel, or a gaming-table? 'Not 'as ſhe has proved an impoſtor,' replied he quite ſeriouſly; 'hang all impoſtors, 'ſay I, I hate them as I hate the devil.' Then, ſays I, I am afraid you and I muſt be ranked among that number: for, what elſe are we ourſelves but the moſt egregious of impoſtors?

But this was ſo far from having any effect on my modeſt companion, that he ſtill inſiſted upon converting the old woman into a thouſand pounds; obſerving, that there was a deal of difference between a young fellow, making his fortune by an honourable ſtroke of fineſſe, and an old woman deceiving a man into a marriage, with no other view than to indulge the moſt baſe and groveling appetite.

Let

Let that be as it would, I could not think of conniving at ſo barbarous an action, even had the annuity been transferable at the bank, which was a circumſtance that I was by no means aſſured of; and aſked him what we ſhould do with our ready furniſhed houſe, hinting, that very probably, when once ſhe came to find I had deceived her, ſhe would make application to her ghoſtly director, and endeavour to proſecute me for a rape. In conſequence of this ſuggeſtion, I paid off my arrears of rent, delivered the keys of my new apartments to the owner, and removed directly to my old lodgings in the Temple.

But I had not been here three days, before my faithful friend Raily, whoſe head was continually plotting ſome new ſcheme, finding this laſt adventure had diſcouraged me from any farther attempts of the like nature, took the opportunity of my ſending him to my

bankers in Lombard-ſtreet to go off with his truſt, amounting to one hundred pounds; but, by way of ſatisfaction for this friendly incroachment upon my ſubſtance, he thought proper to ſend me a line, with a requeſt to make myſelf as eaſy as poſſible; for that, now he was maſter of a little caſh, he was in hopes to give me a ſatisfactory account of my money in a ſhort time, having a deſign in his head to take a ſmall cruiſe in the latitude of a publican's fat widow, who was reckoned worth ten thouſand pounds.

Unſatisfactory as this conſolation was, I was nevertheleſs forced to put up with it for want of a better; but firmly reſolving, that if kind chance once more ſhould throw me in his way, I would do all in my power to facilitate his progreſs to Tyburn, as a recompence for his complicated villanies.

Finding

Finding my fortune reduced conſiderably by this unexpected blow, I reſolved to curtail all ſuperfluous expences, and, as I ſaw no other method at preſent, even to turn my thoughts to authorizing, and endeavour to oblige ſome leading men to furniſh me with a handſome proviſion, under pain of being ſeverely laſhed from the overflowing gaul of my pen; and having the corruptneſs of the then adminiſtration brought upon the tapis by a weekly eſſay, which I intended to uſher into the world, under the title and denomination of "The Speculiſt."

There are your monitors, your heralds, your teſts, your conteſts, centinels, and crab-trees, ſaid I; and pray, why mayn't a modeſt ſpeculiſt enter the liſts alſo, to laſh the follies of the age, and, by introducing a freſh burden upon the coffee-houſes, increaſe the income of the revenue with an additional tax of a new paper?

But, that I might the better qualify myſelf for this new adopted ſcheme, I frequented a coffee-houſe not far from Lincoln's-inn-fields, where a number of politicians, authors, and news-writers, adjourned every evening, in in order to diſcuſs the tranſactions of the day, and hand them again to the world under a new form.

I had not uſed this place long, before I was very agreeably ſurprized to ſee my old club-mate the poet, whom I have formerly mentioned, and more ſo, when I found he was ſo conſiderable a member of the fraternity. I now thought this a proper ſeaſon to open my mind, and gave him to underſtand, that, having ſome thoughts to amuſe the world with my writings, I ſhould be glad to be acquainted with ſome of his learned friends, the better to enable me to go on with ſucceſs. He was tranſported at this my reſolution, which he did not fail to attribute in ſome meaſure

meaſure to the inſight I had reaped from himſelf the laſt time I was in his company, and propoſed to introduce me into a private club of genius's above ſtairs, who met thrice a week, to communicate any new and curious diſcoveries, that each had imbibed during his abſence, in the way of literature.

I was very much pleaſed at this opportunity to commence an intimacy with a ſet of men of whom I hoped to reap conſiderable advantage in regard to my new intended ſcheme, and took an occaſion to enquire after the ſucceſs of his late pamphlet, and whether he had reaped the benefits ariſing from his pompous title-page? At this queſtion he ſhook his head, and obſerved, that he had actually compleated the whole work, and preſented the manuſcript to a very eminent ſtateſman for his peruſal, but, inſtead of being complimented with a handſome ſalary for life, he was kicked out of doors by the miniſter's

footmen, and threatened with a ſtraw-room in Bedlam if ever he preſumed to addreſs his lordſhip with any more of his lunatick eſſays; 'and all this, my 'dear friend,' continued he, 'only be-'cauſe my extraordinary modeſty would 'not let me raiſe my demands any 'higher than a place in the government 'of a paultry five hundred a year; 'tho' I afterwards found out, that the 'poor gentleman was remarkable for an 'extreme dull comprehenſion, and ſub-'jected tothe violent attacks of a perio-'dical frenzy.'

I could not help laughing at this ſingular narration, and condoled with him very much on ſo ſhocking a diſappointment; but he let me know, I was much in the wrong to imagine a man of his ſolidity could be ſhocked at ſuch a trifle, and obſerved he had ſtill another reſource, which I ſhould be acquainted with in due ſeaſon.

He informed me, that the club he intended to introduce me to was a ſociety of very learned men, remarkable for their ſingular turn of fancy, and exalted ſentiments; that they employed the evenings in ſearching out every thing curious in the daily papers, and diſcuſſing our various tranſactions both at home and abroad with impartiality; whereby they were enabled every now and then to alarm the populace with the inſertion of a ſeaſonable paragraph, or the publication of a well concerted pamphlet; and with the daſh of a pen convince the meaneſt capacity of the tottering ſituation of theſe realms, under the influence of a mal adminiſtration; which they were the better qualified to do, as they had correſpondents in ſeveral quarters of the town, ſuch as Grubſtreet, St. Giles's, and the Fleet-priſon.

I was juſt going to object to the importance of this intelligence by obſerving, that there was no great likelihood.

hood that perſons in ſuch a mean condition, or confined in jails, could be reaſonably expected to underſtand thoroughly our connections on the continent, or the tranſactions of our miniſtry at home, when ſeveral of the members entered, and I was obliged to deſiſt for that time, in order to take my ſeat among the elders.

Upon my friend the poet's information that I was a young gentleman of great parts, who had a deſire to be initiated a member of the ſociety, I was received with extraordinary reſpect, and had great reaſon to believe, they were not a little proud of their new aſſociate.

We had not been long ſeated, before one of the brethren took occaſion to obſerve, that the iſland of Minorca was a terrible blow to our trade in general, as the enemy would not fail to improve that advantage to the uttermoſt by employing

ploying their whole power to diſtreſs our merchantmen by privateering.

'Ay, Sir,' replied another, 'we may 'thank ourſelves for the loſs of that 'important fortreſs: but, howſoever, I 'am glad to find the nation has at laſt 'rouſed itſelf, and, by a diſplay of the 'Britiſh lion, given evident proofs what 'old England can do, when it finds it-'ſelf infringed upon, not only by 'public, but alſo private undermining 'enemies.'

'And ſo you fancy that a certain 'perſonage ſuffered death upon that ac-'count?' cried a grim fellow, with a very ſarcaſtic ſneer upon his countenance. 'Undoubtedly, Sir,' retorted the firſt ſpeaker, 'the law was put in 'force to the uttermoſt in that article, 'I can aſſure you; which was the in-'ſtance I mentioned, that Great Britain 'is not to be impoſed upon, when the 'ſafety of the kingdom is concerned,

'let

'let the delinquents be of ever ſo high
'a degree or ſtation.'

'Did you ever ſee the tragedy of
'king Richard the third acted at any
'of the theatres,' rejoined the other,
'anſwer me to that.' 'Very often, Sir,'
replied his antagoniſt; 'but what of
'that?' 'And are you convinced that
'the apparitions therein exhibited were
'not really in themſelves incorporeal
'air, but pure fleſh and blood?' conti-
nued the queriſt. 'Certainly, Sir,'
anſwered the firſt ſpeaker, 'it was only
'a dexterous management of the actors;
'but I ſay, what of all this?'

'Fair and ſoftly, Sir,' returned the
other, 'give me leave to aſk you ano-
'ther ſerious queſtion: Did you never
'take notice with what ſwiftneſs the
'ghoſts made their appearance, and
'that it was all by the mediation of a
'trap-door on the ſtage?' 'I have
'ſeen all this,' replied his antagoniſt,
'but

'but am really at a loſs to comprehend 'your meaning.'

'Why then, in the name of God,' returned this ſly interrogator, 'what 'might hinder the friends of the ſaid 'perſonage to make uſe of the like ſtra-'tagem, and, by a neat contrivance, 'ſupply the place of the criminal by a 'mechanical machine?'

At this remarkable interrogation, the whole audience was ſtruck dumb with a panic fear; which the diſcerning member obſerving, proceeded thus: 'Yes, 'my friends, brains will be brains all the 'world over, let whatever endeavours 'be uſed by cunning politicians to ſay 'otherwiſe. The perſon, whom people 'fooliſhly imagine has long ago fallen 'a ſacrifice to the reſentment of our 'injured country, is now alive and ac-'tually, at this juncture in Holland. 'The authority I ſhall produce will 'convince you of the truth of what I 'ſay.

'fay. Know then, that I am acquainted
'with a perſon, who ſaid he ſaw a
'friend of his, who told him for a cer-
'tain fact, that his own couſin ſpoke to
'a gentleman's valet-de-chambre, who
'is lately arrived from Amſterdam, and
'beheld the very object in queſtion,
'hale and luſty, land out of the packet-
'boat at Helvoetſluice, under the cha-
'racter of a Britiſh tar.'

At this convincing proof, a hollow groan echoed round the board, the epithets of 'poor England!' 'wretched country!' 'infatuated people!' and deluded 'nation!' were bellowed out in ſighs of unfeigned woe; and the thanks of the whole ſociety were immediately laviſhed upon this diſcerning politician, while it was univerſally agreed, that a pamphlet ſhould immediately be publiſhed with all expedition, entitled 'Roguery detected; or, The loſt ſtate of Great 'Britain delineated. In a private letter 'to a friend.'

The

The diſcovery of ſuch a wonderful ſecret had like to have diſconcerted them all from any farther buſineſs for that night, had not the poet aroufed their attention by the following queſtion: 'Don't you think, my dear 'friends, that this wretched nation al-'ways has, and ever will be encum-'bered with a moſt enormous national 'debt, in every now and then defraying 'the expences of foreign and mercena-'ry auxiliaries; and that, if ſome ex-'pedient is not found out to remove 'this inconvenience, our poſterity will 'be ruined?'

They all agreed, that this was a very juſt remark, but that no viſible way had as yet been found to prevent the malady. 'Nor never will,' cried the poet with his whole viſage diſtorted, 'nor never will. Our great ones are 'only employed in feathering their own 'neſts, at the expence of every other 'conſideration. One of our prime mi-

'niſters

'nifters has already rejected my late 'glorious infinuation about the broom-'ſticks: but notwithſtanding this 'ſhocking indignity, I will yet reſtrain 'my fury; I will curb the ſpirit of 'fiery reſentment within me, and like 'the good prophet, deprecate the wrath 'that hangs above our heads, and 'threatens us with tenfold deſtruction.

'Nay, I will even extend my helping 'hand once more to ſave my bleeding 'country: but if this laſt effort will 'not make them, I will be eternally ſi-'lent; for if one was ſent them from 'the dead, they will not believe.'

He then obſerved, with a look that exceeds deſcription, that if the legiſlature would in the next ſeſſions of parliament publiſh an edict, offering a reward of forty ſhillings to every woman, whether married or unmarried, upon the birth of a male child, and the like ſum of forty ſhillings at the end of twelve months, provided the boy be

then

then living; it would not only in the courſe of a few years furniſh our navy and army with an incredible number of able young men, but alſo be a means of preventing the many horrid murders, that unnatural mothers commit upon their helpleſs offspring, from an apprehenſion of the infamy that attends detection. Whereas, if ſimple fornication ſhould paſs without cenſure, and become a fundamental ſupport of the conſtitution, we ſhould find our young men exert themſelves with becoming vigour; while our virgins would take care to manifeſt their obedience to the edict, by a proper application to the duties of their calling, and give evident tokens that they were very far from being uſeleſs members of the community.

This ſagacious obſervation had ſo great an effect on the audience, that it was immediately agreed to uſher a pamphlet into the world with the utmoſt expedition, entitled 'Joyful tidings to both ſexes; or,

'The

'The neceſſity of fornication diſplayed. 'In a letter to the right honourable '——— and ———.'

This important point being ſettled, to the no ſmall joy of the community, a long meagre fellow, with three-fourths of his face beſmeared with ſnuff, ſtarted up, and deſired the company would be graciouſly pleaſed to ſuſpend their concern of public affairs for a few minutes, in order to diſcuſs a point of natural philoſophy which he was about to communicate, and had engaged his attention for ſome time.

'You muſt underſtand, Gentlemen,' ſaid he, 'that it is my misfortune, or 'rather a trial upon my patience, not 'to be overburdened with what the 'generality of mankind diſtinguiſh by 'the appellation of the good things of 'this world; but as this is no more 'than a perſonal inconvenience, and 'what thouſands of worthy men are

'ſubject

'ſubject to beſides myſelf, I am enabled
'to bear the frowns of fortune with
'becoming fortitude. In conſequence
'of this inertia bonorum, I am con-
'ſtrained to put up with a paultry room
'up three pair of ſtairs, not far from
'the neighbourhood of the king's Mews,
'and it has been my lot ever ſince my
'reſidence there to be peſtered moſt con-
'foundedly with legions of fleas. At
'firſt I made extreme devaſtation among
'theſe uſurpers of my territories, by
'carrying fire and ſword into their
'camp; but of late I have begun to
'call the legality of this proceeding in
'queſtion, as they are certainly not
'only the prior inhabitants of the man-
'ſion, but alſo creatures contained in
'that vaſt chain of beings, which gra-
'dually deſcend from infinite perfec-
'tion to abſolute nothing, and conſe-
'quently their lives of the utmoſt im-
'portance in the ſyſtem of nature, tho'
'our ſhallow intellects cannot reach it.
'What induced me alſo to this act of

'for-

'forbearance as to farther injuring them
'in their lives and properties, refults
'from this thought, that certainly an
'infinitely wife Being would never call
'creatures into exiftence, however
'trifling they may appear to our finite
'conceptions, without fome great end
'in view. Now this leads me to the
'point in queftion. As it is become a
'faying, even to a proverb, that many
'men many minds; how do we know
'but the doctrine of Pythagoras, in
'regard to the tranfmigration of fouls,
'may have more in it than moft people
'imagine? Is it not monftrous, horrid,
'and abfurd, to imagine, that God
'would endue mankind with all the
'frailties of human nature, furnifh him
'with paffions, that require the moft
'nice regulation to keep under, and
'then damn him to eternal punifhments
'for the commiffion of actions which
'he may be liable to fall into, from a
'thoufand various caufes? I am rather
'of opinion, that the fouls of men af-

'ter

'ter death paſs into beings of a ſuperior
'or inferior order, according to their
'behaviour in regard to the practice of
'virtue in this life, till after a long ſuc-
'ceſſion of changes, during which the
'pollution of their former crimes gra-
'dually paſs away, and they are, by
'their ſufferings, through a ſtroke of
'infinite wiſdom, made conducive to
'univerſal happineſs, they at leaſt be-
'come purified to act in more exalted
'ſtations, and ſupply the place of be-
'ings, continually aſcending in a per-
'petual gradation.'

I could no longer endure this way of arguing, which I obſerved was ſtriking at the roots of the chriſtian religion, and, by depriving the goſpel of its moſt perſuaſive terrors, was a means to induce mankind to indulge in actions which nothing but the fears of a never ending eternity could reſtrain them from, and inſiſted that his oration was both wicked and abſurd. But I might have

have ſaved myſelf this trouble; for the curioſity of the company was too earneſtly engaged to let the matter drop here, and he was ordered to proceed.

He then lugged out an old iron ſnuff-box, from whence having extracted a monſtrous over-groan flea, and holding it out between his finger and thumb to the company, he proceeded thus: 'Who knows, Gentlemen, but in this 'little trifling inſignificant trunk may 'be contained the ſoul of the great A-'lexander? That barbarous action of 'butchering the faithful Clytus in a 'debauch, was a crime that deſerved 'many ages of puniſhment; and perhaps 'he was ſweating out his way to com-'ing happineſs in the character of a 'flea, and doing penance for his many 'complicated crimes, by being half 'ſmothered under the bedding of my 'garret, when I was an inſtrument to 'releaſe him from captivity, and open a 'free paſſage to a new change. Or per-

'haps

'haps it may be the reſidence of the 'divine Plato, who is obliged to under-'go this mortification as an attone-'ment for human frailties.'

Here one of the members obſerved, that it was not likely to be the earthly tabernacle of the godlike Plato, as, were he in a ſtate of purgation, the turtle-dove would have been the propereſt manſion for a ſoul ſo pure; and farther, that there was greater reaſon to believe, that it might be the habitation of our own king Richard the Third, who, having been born with large teeth, and always inclinable to bite mankind while in his proper character, might reaſonably be ſuppoſed to aſſume a ſtation that ſeemed moſt convenient to exerciſe his grinders, and indulge his voracious appetite; and conſequently, what creature more applicable than a flea, who, in its very nature, was a moſt outragious blood-ſucker?

This laſt reaſoning appeared able to truth, that it was un reſolved the flea in queſtion no other than the individual which they were the rather in believe, as it was the largeſt o that ever any in the compan membered to have beheld in courſe of their lives. After e had ſurveyed this animal, a proper reflections on what ſaid, the owner, at laſt, clapt the blaze of the candle, and tice at the ſame time, that, as memory of the man was almo it would be a mark of a m to commit any indecency upon t and conſequently he would h after the manner of the antie finiſh the purgation by fire.

By this time it was drawing v which the aſſembly perceiving, to defer any farther conſulta

ıe matter, and leave the name of the amphlet that was to be raiſed upon ıe ſubject of this laſt diſcourſe till ur next meeting; after which we roke up for that night, and I retired to ıy own apartment, loſt in amazement t the ſingularity of theſe mortals, and s much out of humour with my pro-ct of authorizing as I had ever been or it; the very thought of which, fter this night's abſurdity, having rought an effectual cure, at leaſt, for hat time.

CHAP. VI.

I lay aſide all thoughts of authorizing. — Go into the city, and am ſmitten with the charms of a young lady in the ſtreet. — Trace her home in extaſies, and diſcover a bill over the door to let lodgings. — Find means to ſettle myſelf as a border in the family. — Am agreeably ſurpriſed at a ſecond interview to meet with Dick Savage, who proves to be journeyman to my landlord. — He lets me into the characters of each individual.

IN theſe and ſuch like amuſements I paſſed my time, till I had fairly trifled away twenty pounds of my ſtock; and as to doing any good by commencing author, I could ſee no proſpect: the numberleſs productions of the preſs (multitudes of which I was informed by the bookſellers, though many of them works of real merit, did not even

even defray the expences of publication) gave me a ſufficient check to any attempts that way; and I had been ſo ſurfeited with the bombaſtical inconſiſtencies of the late club, that I verily thought Bedlam was the fitteſt manſion for their reſidence.

Enraged at the thoughts of having waſted ſo much time and money, without the ſatisfaction of procuring me one ſincere friend, I went to my banker's in Lombard-ſtreet, with intent to take up twenty pounds more; but fully reſolved, that if nothing turned out to my advantage before that ſum was expended, to go abroad, and try my fortune in the Eaſt-Indies, rather than ſpend my time in idleneſs, and the daily expectation of approaching want.

I had juſt got the length of the Manſion-houſe, after having put this deſign in execution, when my eyes were bleſſed with a ſight of the faireſt crea-

ture that ever was exhibited in fleſh and blood. As all my proſpects, till this time, had been centered among the ſpecies of old maids and ſuperannuated widows, a view of ſo much beauty, as was then preſented to my admiring eyes, could not fail to charm me. Her courſe lying up Cheapſide, I had the ſatisfaction to follow her all the way; during which it is impoſſible to deſcribe the unuſual ſenſations that poſſeſſed my boſom. Her air and carriage were inexpreſſibly graceful; and in her eye were delineated the ſupreme joys of love.

Heavens! what were the emotions of my ſoul on this occaſion! I followed her — went before her — croſſed the way — re-croſſed again, in order to have an opportunity to meet her; and after all, found, to my experience, that my moſt refined conceptions of love hitherto had been grounded on no better a foundation than fits of paſſion, novelty,

novelty, and juvenile warmth: and bore no more reſemblance to my preſent feelings, than the twinkling of a ſtar to the glorious blaze of Phœbus in his meridian. I was twenty times upon the point of accoſting her, that I might bleſs my ears with the muſic of her inchanting tongue; but I was over-awed by a reverence hitherto unknown to me, and recoiled back as often in confuſion.

Alarmed at theſe unuſual ſymptoms of captivity, I endeavoured to turn aſide from the inchantment that attended her motion; but it was impoſſible. My eyes were attracted towards her ſteps with more than magnetic influence, while the tumults of my blood ſufficiently denoted, that the magick of her charms had already taken full poſſeſſion of my heart.

As by her appearance and dreſs I had reaſon to believe ſhe was a young lady of fortune, how did I curſe the male-

volence of my ſtars that had withheld me from the ſight of ſo much perfection, when I had it perhaps in my power to engage her love with honour! I now found myſelf ſufficiently puniſhed for my deceitful behaviour to the ſex in general, while under the character of a fortune-hunter; and had my old electrified miſtreſs but known the ſituation of my mind at this juncture, ſhe would have had no reaſon to complain of her utmoſt revenge being unſatisfied.

But, that I might improve the preſent opportunity to know the condition of this enſlaver of my heart, I traced her very aſſiduouſly, till ſhe entered a handſome houſe in D——ſtreet. I ſpent ſome time in walking up and down, leſt ſhe might have only called there en paſſant; but after a whole hour's preambulation, without ſeeing any thing of her, I concluded it muſt certainly be the place of her abode. I now took a particular obſervation of the houſe, that I might

I might be at no loſs to find it again, and for this purpoſe paſſed it ſeveral times; but my joy was unbounded at perceiving theſe words above the door, 'Ready furniſhed lodgings for a ſingle 'gentleman.' At this diſcovery my whole ſoul was agonized with rapture. I no longer entertained the narrow notions of œconomy; but thinking only now I ſhould enjoy the ſight of ſo charming a creature, I went home to dreſs myſelf, and reſolved to take the individual lodgings in queſtion, if they were to be had for money.

With this view I put on my moſt gorgeous apparel: and, brimful of joy, went to the manſion that contained the treaſure of my heart; when knocking and making my errand known at the door, I was conducted into a very handſome parlour by the ſervant, and deſired to ſit down. Soon after an elderly gentleman came into the room, and very ſurlily aſked me to walk up

ſtairs; and while I was exploring the conveniencies of the apartment, he eyed me from head to foot with the greateſt attention, and after a little pauſe, addreſſed me thus: 'I preſume, Sir, you 'are no ſtranger to the rules of London with regard to letting of lodgings. 'There are ſo many impoſitions carried 'on under ſpecious appearances, that a 'houſekeeper cannot be too much upon 'his guard. Why, would you believe 'it, Sir, no longer ago than laſt Friday was ſe'nnight, neighbour Pruen, 'the grocer over the way, had his 'houſe robbed of a conſiderable quantity of plate and valuables, by one of 'his gentleman-like lodgers: ſo, that 'you'll excuſe me, Sir, if I cannot proceed farther in this affair, till I am 'authentically informed, from whence 'you came, who you are, and what is 'your calling in this metropolis.'

Such a ſalute as this, and at a time when my whole faculties were abſorbed in

in the proſpect of ſoon ſeeing my adorable miſtreſs, did not fail to ſhock me. I was for ſome minutes ſo overcome with grief, ſhame, and indignation, that I had not power to utter a ſingle word: at length, recovering myſelf, I laid my hand upon my ſword, and ſwore the ſanction of his houſe protected him, or I would quickly convince him, what was due to the villain who ſhould preſume to decoy gentlemen, by his pretended bills, with no other view than to affront them in the groſſeſt manner.

So ſaying, I was hurrying down ſtairs in a violent paſſion, when his wife, who very likely had foreſeen ſomething of this nature, from a knowledge of his general behaviour, met me in the paſſage, and intreated me in ſo handſome a manner not to go away till ſhe ſhould bring her huſband to a juſt ſenſe of his folly, that I was prevailed upon to ſtep into a parlour, induced thereto

thereon by the appearance of my charmer in company with two other young ladies.

Finding myſelf in this ridiculous embarraſſment, I was at a loſs how to carry the affair off with a good grace; but, after a little recollection, I began in this manner: Upon my honour, Ladies, I make no queſtion, but you are very agreeably entertained with the ridiculous figure I muſt appear in at this preſent. I am accuſed, by implication, of much a crime than felony and houſe-breaking—and yet the good lady of the houſe has been ſo condeſcending, that I am actually at a loſs how to reſent this infringement upon good manners as becomes a gentleman. For my part, I have experienced many ſcenes in my life, but cannot recollect, that ever I was hemmed into ſo ludicrous a ſituation as the preſent one.

While

While they were apologizing for the ill manners of the old gentleman, who, they ſaid, was rendered peeviſh through his infirmities, he entered the parlour, attended by his wife, and, in a gruff manner, begged pardon for his abruptneſs: people were ſo apt to be deceived, he ſaid, that there was no truſting to appearances; but if I had a mind for his ſecond floor, I might have it, and welcome. He was convinced, I was a gentleman, and, moreover, I ſhould not depart his houſe, till I had drank friends with him, and poſitively taken the apartments in queſtion.

To this requeſt his wife and daughters joined in concert, while my charmer obſerved, in a manner that thrilled my ſoul, that it was a thouſand pities Mr. Brown had not a more agreeable method of delivery, as it might prevent numberleſs affronts, which he never intended as ſuch: but ſhe dared to ſay, that

that we ſhould be the better friends for this little miſunderſtanding.

Theſe conceſſions, or rather the inward workings of my heart, at the thought of being under the ſame roof with ſo charming a creature, prevailed upon me to grant their requeſt, and I mounted the ſtairs a ſecond time, not a little glad at having ſettled this affair upon ſo amicable a footing.

While the old gentleman was very buſy in explaining on the conveniencies of every particular, I took occaſion to aſk him, if there was no private family in the neighbourhood, where I could board, as I had an utter averſion to public tables, and would ſcruple no price. At this he obſerved, that, though it was not his cuſtom to take in boarders or lodgers either, only as he had a deſire to have a large houſe full, he ſhould be a fit ill family, and he might as well let a part of

of it to any gentleman; and, if I had no objection to the contrary, I might board with them alſo.

This was juſt what I wanted. I therefore chimed in with his propoſal with great chearfulneſs, and agreed to pay him in the whole after the rate of twenty pounds per quarter; and, notwithſtanding all his evaſions, I inſiſted upon paying down the firſt quarter in advance, which I found means to perſuade him to accept of, by obſerving, that it would juſt ſave me the trouble of a journey to meſſieurs ———, bankers in Lombard-ſtreet, with whom I always depoſited any ſums above five pounds, and that I had juſt received the payment of an inland bill from Briſtol for exactly the money. I thought this inſinuation neceſſary, that he might thereby have an opportunity to convince himſelf I was no impoſtor.

I then

I then offered him ſeveral directions, where he might ſatisfy himſelf as to my character; but he was grown ſo polite all at once, that he would not hear a word more on that ſubject; which I was very glad of, as I did not chooſe to trouble any of my acquaintance upon ſuch an occaſion. I ſoon perceived the articles of depoſiting the money, and mentioning the banker, were not thrown away; he very complaiſantly invited me to ſtay tea, which I as joyfully accepted of, as being what I had earneſtly wiſhed for.

I had now leiſure to feaſt my eyes in contemplating the moſt elegant work of nature. She was in a moſt captivating dreſs, and appeared ten times more charming to my imagination every moment. She could not be more than ſeventeen years of age at the fartheſt; but ſo genteel, ſo neat, and fair beyond expreſſion. I had not been ſeated ten minutes, before I had the pleaſure to obſerve

ſerve her eye me with ſome attention; but my heart was diſſolved in tranſports, when I heard one of the young ladies diſtinguiſh her by the endearing name of Sophy, a ſound, ten thouſand times more raviſhing to my ears than the moſt exquiſite ſtrains of Handel. During this happy period I forgot all my misfortunes, cares, and anxieties whatſoever; and thinking I had now found one whoſe ſweet ſociety would amply reward me for any expence I might be at in the procuring it, and attone for the loſs of my poor Sukey, I put on ſo chearful a behaviour, and aſſumed ſuch gaiety of addreſs, that the old gentleman and his wife confeſſed they ſhould be very happy in my company; while the young ones expreſſed as much, by the ſignification of ſome gracious looks, for the meaning of which I was at no loſs. At taking my leave, which, after a moſt inordinate ſtay, I hardly knew how to do, he aſked me when I intended entering on the lodgings?

On

On which I told him, that I would ſend my clothes and books that very night, and be ready to enter the next morning.

All the way going home I could not help reflecting within myſelf on the ſtep I had taken; a ſtep, which, in my more ſerious thoughts, I could not but look on as imprudent, as without ſome re-inforcement, I could not expect to ſupport long with honour; for I could eaſily perceive this young unknown had wrought a moſt wonderful change in my whole frame. Whenever I approached any female before, let her condition be ever ſo high, I did it with freedom and eaſe: but I could not for the ſoul of me look upon this charming girl without the moſt conſummate adoration; and in conſequence of theſe ſymptoms, I directly concluded, that love had taken poſſeſſion of my whole faculties; not a momentary deſire for the gratification of a debaſed appetite,

petite, but a profound eſteem for her, ſettled on a ſympathy of ſouls, and eſtabliſhed on the baſis of the moſt conſummate beauty. How did I now hug myſelf, that I was not encumbered with an old wife, to chain down my aſpiring mind from the glorious proſpects of poſſeſſing ſo amiable a woman! If that now had been my caſe, I ſhould certainly, in the diſtraction of my ſoul, have done ſome raſh action; and I congratulated myſelf on the happy proſpect before me a thouſand times.

My pictures, my books, and every curioſity that had ſtood me in ſuch large ſums of money, now appeared precious in my eye, and I hardly regretted the price they had coſt me; as I fancied theſe things would not only ſerve to raiſe me in the opinion of the old people, but alſo procure me the approbation of my charming miſtreſs. Theſe I cauſed to be packed up, and ſent them away by a porter the ſame evening, with a direction to the ſervant,

to

to put up my book-caſe, which was of mahogony, in the cloſet. Doubtleſs, thinks I, a peruſal of ſuch things will make them believe I am a gentleman of fortune; and who knows, but I may fall upon ways and means to bring this affair to a happy concluſion! Perhaps her fortune is but ſmall—Why, heavens grant it may prove ſo! I ſhall then be the more likely to ſucceed, as being upon a level with her: for could I only be ſo happy as to enjoy the love of ſo charming a creature, I could be contented in a hovel, and not envy the greateſt monarch upon earth.

Entranced with theſe pleaſing ſuggeſtions, I ſpent the night in planning out ſchemes, whereby I might improve the remainder of my fortune to the uttermoſt; and after all could ſee no method more likely to ſucceed, than, as the war had been ſome time commenced, to lay out two hundred pounds in conjunction with ſome of thoſe adventurers

venturers who were fitting out privateers to cruiſe againſt the French, and with the ballance in hand, apply myſelf to whatever might occur wherein I was likely to make any advantage. The more I thought of this ſcheme, the better I liked it. It was the only branch of buſineſs I could engage in, without being expoſed to the villany of deceitful men. They cannot, thought I, take the advantage of me in this, as in multitudes of other ſorts of trade; for, if there are any prizes taken, it will be impoſſible to conceal them; and ſhould the ſhip be overpowered by a ſuperior force, and carried off by the enemy, I ſhall at leaſt have the ſatisfaction to think my misfortunes are providential, and that I am not ruined by a ſet of deſigning knaves.

Being come to this reſolution, I made myſelf quite eaſy, and reſolved to ingratiate myſelf, by every means I could think of, into the good graces of my land-

landlord, that ſo I might have the better opportunity to engage the affections of my miſtreſs. Beſides this, I eaſily foreſaw, I ſhould have no ſmall difficulty in eluding the prying eyes of her companions, from whom I muſt uſe all my cunning to conceal my attachment.

Next morning I went in high ſpirits to breakfaſt in my new lodgings, and upon knocking at the door, was horribly confounded at being let in by my old companion Dick Savage, whom I had not ſeen ever ſince our coming home together from Epſom, and the adventure of the club-night. This encounter alarmed me. I immediately ſet him down in my mind as a rival to my happineſs, and concerted his deſtruction that very minute. Yes, yes, thinks I, he is either enamoured of her beauty or fortune, and has already perhaps won her love: but I will tear the villain to atoms, who ſhall but preſume to come between me and my darling hopes,

hopes, my dear, angelical, blooming Sophy.

I was ſo overcome with this reflection, that I had no power to anſwer him to his congratulations at this unexpected meeting; but was fain to lean againſt the wall, in order to keep myſelf from falling. 'Bleſs me!' ſaid he, 'what's the matter? you look pale!' Do I? then you are a villain, and are the occaſion of it, anſwered I, half choaked with riſing paſſion, and I will be the death of you this moment.

The poor fellow was ſo confounded at this unexpected addreſs, that he concluded me ſmitten with lunacy, and, puſhing back a ſide door, which I had not as yet perceived, conducted me into an elegant apothecary's ſhop, and began to apply ſome hart's-horn to my noſe with great eagerneſs. This action brought me a little to myſelf. I recollected, that very poſſibly the gentleman

you are one, and with whom alſo, and congratulate you on your refined taſte. Next you muſt know, that I have had a mighty quarrel with that ſame uncle you ſpeak of; in conſequence of which, I am here, d'ye ſee, in quality of journeyman apothecary, till I can have an opportunity to find out a place ſuitable to my inclinations, by going to ſea.'

This intelligence cleared away all my gloom. I looked upon my rencounter with Dick as one of the luckieſt tranſactions in nature that could poſſibly have happened, and took that opportunity to inquire into the fortune and family of my miſtreſs, whom I now confeſſed to him to be deeply in love with.

He told me ſhe was the daughter of a deceaſed merchant, that ſhe was an orphan, eighteen years of age, and had a fortune of two thouſand pounds in the hands of his maſter, who was her

ıſequence of this intelligence, his
r had brightened up exceedingly ;
aughters were elevated with the
hts of getting a huſband ; and
Sophy had declared, ſhe had en-
ıed a notion from the firſt ſight
, that I was undoubtedly a gentle-

'And now,' continued Dick,
will very probably ſee the effects
his at breakfaſt ; for they certainly
you for a man of fortune. In
mean time, I believe, it would be
e prudent in you to conceal any
wledge you have of me, that I
be the better enabled to tell you
ıt is ſaid from time to time in your
nce.'

ras tranſported at this intelligence,
promiſing to obey him in every
ıular, went up ſtairs in a tumult
y.

CHAP. VII.

I grow in favour with the apothecary.—Buy a share in a private ship of war.—Harangue a club of shopkeepers on the nature of trade.—Accompany the ladies to Vauxhall.—What happened there.

'is not ſo governable as in people of a 'freſher date: the paſſions are in a 'manner wholly tutored by the well or 'ill conditions of our bodily organs, ſo 'that it oftentimes happens that a 'twitch of the gout, or a chronical 'head-ach, will make a man commit 'ſtrange treſpaſſes in point of good 'manners, while otherwiſe he may 'be the beſt natured creature in the 'world.'

I now began to find, that Dick's preſages had been verified, and put a ſtop to his farther apologies, by taking notice, that, as the preſervation of a family moſtly depended upon knowing who they admitted under their roof, he had certainly an unqueſtionable right to ſatisfy himſelf in ſo important an article; and as to any unmeaning words he might have dropt the day before, I took it as a moſt infallible indication of the honeſty of his nature, that was not uſed to diſguiſe his real ſentiments

under a borrowed maſk and appearance of politeneſs; than which nothing could be more odious to a generous mind, or hateful in the ſight of God and men, and concluded my ſpeech by begging him to reſt aſſured, that, inſtead of reſenting his behaviour in a circumſtance ſo important, that he could not oblige me more than by making immediate enquiry into my circumſtances and moral character.

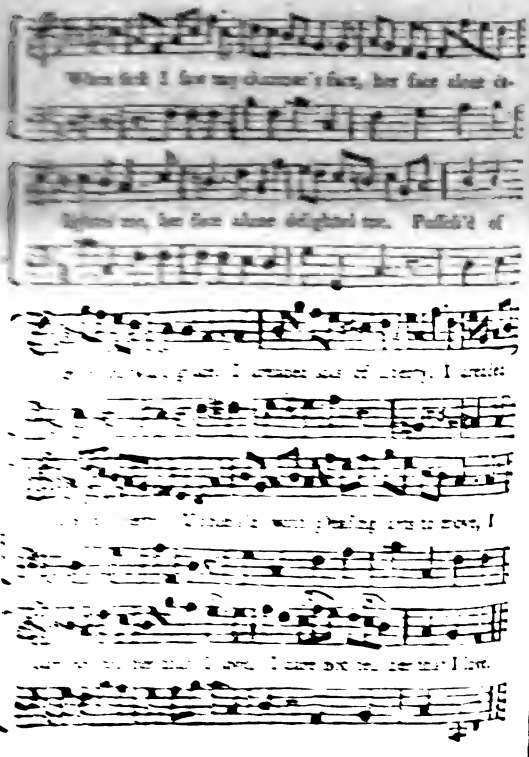
But this he declined with the greateſt energy, and I found that their good opinion of me increaſed every minute. He told me it was very uncommon to ſee ſo young a man in this licentious age, give himſelf any trouble about books; and he was glad to ſee by my pictures, I had a taſte for the polite arts. 'There is a very fine violin alſo come 'with your clothes,' ſays he, 'and you 'muſt poſitively oblige us with a little 'of your ſkill upon that inſtrument, 'now and then, for I am exceſſively

'fond

'fond of it. And come, girls, ſuppoſe 'Mr. Murray ſhould be inclined to give 'us a ſpecimen of his abilities at this 'time, would you object to it?' 'No, 'no, indeed, Sir,' cried they one and all;' 'and if the gentleman,' ſaid Miſs Biddy, the youngeſt daughter, 'will but favour us with a ſong of 'his own at the ſame time, as I am 'ſure he can, he will oblige us beyond 'expreſſion.'

There needed not many arguments to induce me to comply with this requeſt; for having the over-night given vent to the feelings of my heart in the following lines, and which I had ſet to muſic, I thought this a lucky opportunity to exhibit them in; and therefore, without waiting for farther intreaty, I took up my violin, and, laying the notes before me, accompanied it in theſe words:

A SONG.


When first I saw my charmer's face, her face alone de-
lighted me, her face alone delighted me. Pulsh'd of

And

And oh! I found the heav'nly maid
Had charms of a ſuperior kind!
Charms ſuch as time can never fade,
The heav'n-born beauties of the mind!
At ſenſe and beauty ſo divine,
What heart ſo cold but burns like mine?

Lie ſtill, fond heart, nor blindly run
On miſeries unfelt before,
But, as the Perſian does the ſun,
At awful diſtance her adore.
Reſign, fond youth, to fate's decree;
Such virtues were not made for thee.

All this time I took care to direct my glances in ſuch a manner, as, without being taken notice of by others in the room, my Sophy might apply the words as meant to herſelf; and I had reaſon to believe, from ſome ſymptoms I perceived in her look on the occaſion, that ſhe did ſo, and that ſhe recollected my aſſiduity in following her a few days before; all

which ſeemed to indicate a happy preſage of my future proſpects.

The elder Miſs Brown ſaid, that if the young lady came up to the original, ſhe muſt be a maſter-piece of nature, and the lover had a fine taſte; while my charmer obſerved, that I had a very happy imagination for extending my characters beyond life; and if ever it was her fortune to be in love, ſhe ſhould think it a very great happineſs to be endued with ſo elegant a vein of fancy, to ſupport her in the abſence of her darling ſwain.

Here I was ſo entranced with the muſic of her delightful tongue, that, unmindful of the conſequences, I replied without heſitation, The man who ſhall be ſo happy, Miſs, as to have ſo fine a lady for a ſubject, has no occaſion for the muſes to inſpire him to poetry. Every word, action, and geſture of

of his adorable miſtreſs, becomes an inſtrument in the hands of Cupid to tranſport his mind to the moſt ſublime ideas; and no ſooner is his ſoul touched with the divine paſſion of love, than he immediately is metamorphoſed into the moſt admired orator, the fineſt painter, the beſt poet, and the moſt exquiſite muſician in the Univerſe; at leaſt, he receives the ſeeds of all theſe gifts within him, and very trifling efforts will bring him to the higheſt perfection.

'I fancy, Sir,' ſaid the eldeſt daughter, 'you have already experienced 'what it is to love, you picture that 'paſſion ſo feelingly.' This queſtion made me inſtantly ſenſible, that I had carried the matter too far; on which I replied, Not I, Miſs, I do aſſure you; but I cannot anſwer for myſelf, if I am thus long bleſſed with the company and converſation of ladies who might grace

grace the ſide of an emperor. It is all by the help of a little anticipating fancy that I am enabled to arrive at the ſmall knowledge I have of this grand mover of the human breaſt, and from the obſervations I have taken of ſome of my friends, while under its preſſure.

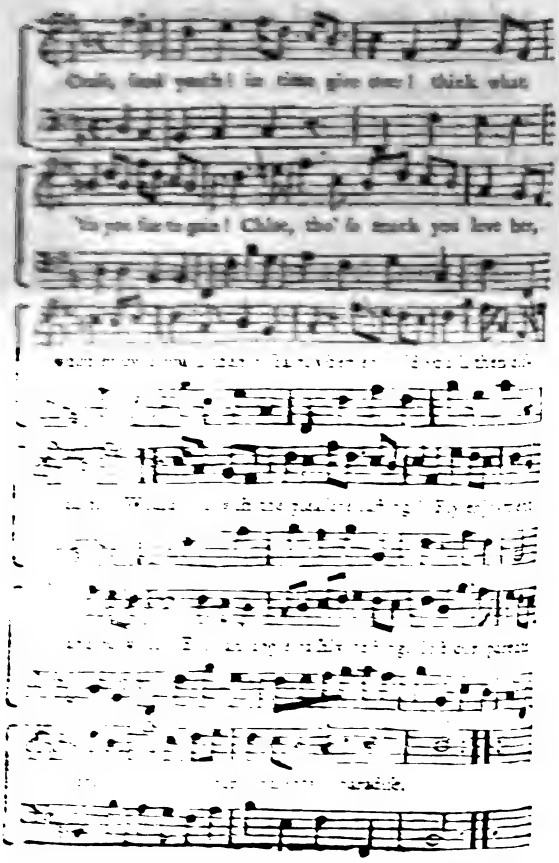
'**And that is the beſt method of all,**
'**Sir,**' quoth **Mr. Brown,** '**I can aſſure**
'you: a theory built upon facts, being
'the beſt foundation in the whole prac-
'tice of phyſic. But, however, young
'Gentleman, though I muſt own your
'poetry to be very pretty, yet I cannot
'ſay it altogether pleaſes me; for, to
'be plain with you, I do not like the
'ſubject. Look ye, Sir, (taking a
'paper out of his pocket-book) I have
'here a copy of verſes wrote by Will
'Couplet, and ſet by Dick Gamut, ſome
'forty years ago, which carry ſome
'ſenſe in them. You ſhall hear 'em,
'Sir; but as nature never meant me

'for

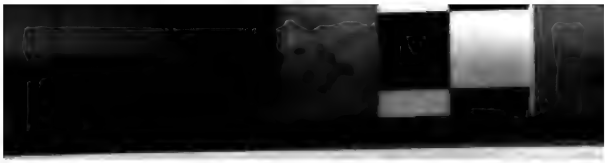
'for a ſinger, I ſhall wave any attempt 'of that ſort, and content myſelf in 'repeating them without any other 'aids than thoſe of a proper emphaſis, 'and juſt pronunciation; qualifications 'I would have you to know, Sir, I am 'not a little famed for.'

He then, in a very deliberate manner, proceeded to put on his ſpectacles, which having accompliſhed, with a tone, action, and utterance of a ſlaughter-houſe hero, he bellowed out theſe words:

A SONG.


Ouds, heart quoth I in time give over! think what
Ye you for to gain! Chloe, tho' so much you love her,

What



What is grandeur, wealth, or power?
Toys that pleaſe at diſtant view;
All their charms, poſſeſs'd an hour,
Fade, as Chloe's will with you.
Then nor ſtrive, nor longer trifle
For a conqueſt which when won,
Will your tender paſſion ſtifle,
And you'll find yourſelf undone.

Having ended, and picked up his ſpectacles, which had dropped from his noſe, before he concluded the laſt line, he deſired to know my opinion of his friend Will's performance, and whether there was not reaſon in it as well as rhime?

I told him I thought there was ſome ingenuity in the performance, but that I could not by any means ſubſcribe to Mr. Couplet's opinion, that a woman was leſs valuable after poſſeſſion than before; that, on the contrary, where love was founded on the baſis of virtue

tue and truth, and ſupported by a ſimilitude of manners and inclinations, it rather ſerved to heighten the affection, and cement the union the ſtronger.

'Fiddle, faddle,' replied the old gentleman, 'away with your virtue and 'truth, your cement and union, and I 'know not what — I tell you ——'

'La, Papa,' interrupted the eldeſt daughter, 'how can you talk in this 'manner? I vow you are enough to 'deter us girls from ever venturing 'upon a huſband, your doctrine is ſo 'frightful.'

'No, no,' replied he, 'there is no 'great danger in that, girl, I promiſe 'you —— Why, there is your mother 'now, there ſhe ſits, and let her deny 'it if ſhe can: why, I told her as 'much a twelve-month before I mar-'ried her, yet ſhe would not take my 'word for it, but was willing to put

'it

'it to trial, and ſhe has long ſince ex-'perienced that I told her no lie.'

This dry and unexpected concluſion ſet the whole company a laughing, but as it was a ſubject not altogether adapted to the delicate ears of my Sophy, whoſe face it had crimſoned with a bluſh, I forbore to make any reply to the old gentleman's remark, and ſoon found means to give a turn to the converſation by calling another topick; and after having paſſed away beſt part of the afternoon in a manner much to my ſatisfaction, and made more progreſs in my affairs than I could have expected in ſo ſhort a time, I went up to my new apartments, and began to conſider with myſelf how I ſhould proceed in this buſineſs: for I found I was unable to live without a ſpeedy union with that charming girl, who, by her lively wit, and modeſt behaviour, had compleated that conqueſt, which

which her beauty began. I ſaw, that if I did not keep an extraordinary watch over my words and actions, I ſhould ſoon betray the ſecrets of my ſoul to her companions; and, from the little converſation I had had with them already, I was very much of opinion, that Dick had not exaggerated in his account of them.

I was glad, however, to find the old gentleman had ſent to my banker's for an account, and in conſequence of this diſcovery, I reſolved to put a ſcheme in practice, to deceive him ſtill farther. For this purpoſe I took up two hundred pounds from their hands, which I placed to a book the other end of the room, intending to make this piece of ſtrategem turn out ſo as to raiſe me ſtill higher in his opinion.

It was not long before I had occaſion to put this in practice. In a few days he invited me to accompany him

to

to a tavern, in order to ſpend the evening the more agreeably. I ſoon perceived the company conſiſted moſtly of ſhopkeepers, and people of his own profeſſion, with whom I entered into diſcourſe very freely, about the nature and progreſs of trade; our political connections with other nations in point of commerce, with the advantages and diſadvantages reſulting therefrom; and by the help of ſome little ſuperficial knowledge I had imbibed from books, a front of aſſurance, and a ready delivery, I found means to perſuade them, that I had a moſt extenſive acquaintance with this valuable branch of knowledge.

'I preſume, Sir, you are a merchant, ſays a corpulent woollen-draper of Ludgate-hill, 'and have dealt very largely 'abroad, to enable you to arrive at 'ſuch a perfect underſtanding of theſe 'intricate matters.' No, no, Sir, ſaid I, in theſe troubleſome times I am ſick of

of that ſort of game, I do aſſure you; I have ſmarted ſufficiently for my proceedings in that way already, and ſhall take care how I engage in any ſuch work again, without mature deliberation. My buſineſs at preſent lies chiefly in diſtreſſing the enemy by privateering. I am deeply engaged in this play at Briſtol, and have had ſome lucky hits hitherto. I ſhould not even ſcruple to hazard a few hundred pounds more, if I could light on a ſociety of gentlemen who intended to venture upon that footing.

'Say you ſo?' quoth Mr. Brown, who was much delighted at this intelligence; 'I can tell you then, there 'never could be a better time than 'juſt now. Here is a ſubſcription carrying on to fit out a private ſhip of war, 'to mount fourteen carriage guns, ſixteen 'ſwivels, a large quantity of muſquetoons, hand-granadoes and ſmk-pots, 'and two hundred men; receipts for 'which

'which may either be had at the bar 'of this tavern, or at Meſſrs. D——d 'and Comp. bankers at ———, at 'one hundred pounds each ſhare; the 'books to be kept open till the ſum 'of twelve thouſand pounds ſhall be 'ſubſcribed; and the balance, if any re-'mains, to be reſerved in bank, in caſe 'of accidents; and as I have ventured 'two ſhares here myſelf, I ſhould be 'glad to have my friend embark in 'the ſame bottom, for the ſake of 'company.'

I was not a little glad to hear him mention Mr. D——d, as it was with him I had depoſited my money a little before: ſo, after peruſing the articles, which I ſeemed to approve of vaſtly, I ſaid I would accompany him in this project with great pleaſure, and immediately wrote a line to Mr. D——d, with a deſire to apply one hundred pounds of my caſh towards a ſhare in the privateer then upon ſubſcription.

I could

I could perceive Mr. Brown was much ſurpriſed to find I had more money in another quarter alſo, and his opinion of my circumſtances roſe gradually from that minute.

My ſituation was now very agreeable. I was every day bleſſed with the ſight and converſation of the charmer of my ſoul; and tho' I had as yet refrained from the leaſt hint of my paſſion by a verbal communication, I nevertheleſs flattered myſelf I had made great progreſs in the art of love by the language of the eyes, which beſpoke my feelings in a thouſand lively inſinuations.

One day, in conſequence of a more than ordinary agreeableneſs in the weather, I invited the whole family to ſpend the evening at Vauxhall, obſerving, that the ſeaſon would ſoon be at an end, and it would be pity to let ſlip ſo favourable an opportunity to enjoy ſo charming and rational an amuſement.

nent. The old couple, as I had expected, declined the motion with great civility; but I eaſily prevailed upon the young ones to favour me with their company, and we all four ſet out in a hackney-coach.

When we entered the gardens, I engaged the coachman to wait and carry us home again; and took ſingular care to provide myſelf with a box ſituated near the muſic, where I had the pleaſure to treat my partners with a very handſome cold collation. The muſic, the wine, fine evening, brilliant company, and, above all, the favourable looks of Miſs Sophy, who was more than ordinary gay on this occaſion, thrilled my ſoul. My boſom was filled with ſuch extaſy, that it was impoſſible to hide it, and in the tranſports of my heart, I ſaid and did a thouſand pleaſantries, having all the reaſon in the world to believe I had made an impreſſion on my charmer, whoſe lovely eyes

eyes beamed upon me every minute with tenfold radiance. Elated at theſe favourable ſymptoms, which I conſtrued as the luckieſt omens to my love, I attended them round the gardens, explained the paintings expoſed to view, with tolerable accuracy, and had the pleaſure to be ſaluted by ſome gay young fellows, on the ſtrength of a ſuperficial and coffee-houſe acquaintance, whoſe dreſs and behaviour on this occaſion I fancied did me great honour.

While I was employed in this delightful manner, I was much ſurpriſed at the ſight of my friend Raily, elegantly equipped in ſcarlet and gold, and leading up a hoary matron, who might have very well paſſed for his grandmother. Though my indignation was very great at this rencounter with a ſcoundrel who had abuſed my confidence ſo groſsly, yet I could not help laughing at his burleſque appearance; and, after begging the ladies pardon for a ſingle

a ſingle minute, I ran after him fully reſolved to either make him render me ſatisfaction, or have him apprehended for a robbery. I found means to overtake him juſt as he was quitting the gardens, when perceiving me approach with a furious geſture, he quitted the woman he was with, and thought proper to ſtop my mouth by crying out, 'Have a little patience, my dear friend! 'for heaven's ſake don't blow me, and 'I will pay you the whole tote. D'ye 'ſee that piece of antiquity? You muſt 'know I am her governor, ſhe is my 'lawful wedded wife, and as loving a 'ſoul as ever ſpread callicoe; and to 'crown all, my boy, I am this day 'as rich as a Crœſus. D——n ſnuff-'ling ſay I, and flinching to boot; I 'found nothing was to be done with-'out the duſt, ſo I e'en thought pro-'per to borrow a little from my friend 'to cruiſe upon my own bottom. I 'have ſucceeded, and here is your mo-'ney again with thanks.' So ſaying,

he pulled out his pocket book, and preſented me with two fifty pound bank notes, which I received with vaſt joy.

At this unlooked-for acquiſition, which I conſidered as ten times the ſum in my then ſituation, as I had given over every farthing for loſt, I recalled my good humour, my reſentment ſubſided apace, and I gave him joy of his happy purchace: I then exacted his place of reſidence, with a promiſe to let me into the particulars of his good fortune at leiſure, and quitting him for that time, went back to rejoin the ladies.

I was hugging myſelf all the way in the happineſs I ſhould receive in expending this ſum in the proſecution of my love, when upon drawing near the box, I perceived the ladies were under no little agitation, occaſioned by the impudence of one of thoſe town-rakes, who take every opportunity, and place their

their ſupreme delight in affronting ladies alone and unaccompanied, with language that would diſgrace a carman. He was ſtill carrying on his harangue, ſurrounded by a ſet of fellows of the ſame ſtamp, when I approached, and ſeeing the tears in my Sophy's eyes, and her companions very much diſordered, I loſt all patience, and ſeizing him by the throat, without regarding the place I was in, complimented him with a few ſmart kicks on the breech. Arouſed at this unwelcome ſalute, he diſengaged himſelf, drew his ſword, and invited me to accompany him to the adjacent field. I obeyed this injunction with great readineſs, being under very little apprehenſions from the ſword of my antagoniſt, as I had taken care to perfect myſelf in the ſcience of defence with the greateſt accuracy. But we were prevented from carrying this matter farther, by the interpoſition of his companions, one of whom took notice, that it was not

worth Sir William's while, to meddle with ſo dirty a fellow. He is a dirty ſcoundrel, anſwered I, in a tranſport of rage, who calls me ſo: and if you, or any one among ye, dare to affirm, that that booby (pointing to the ſuppoſed knight) has acted any other but a brutiſh, mean, and villanous part, unworthy the character of a gentleman, or a man of honour, I will maintain him to be a moſt daſtardly poltron, and make good my aſſertion with the point of my ſword.

They were ſo confounded at the reſolute manner I ſpoke theſe words, and which I accompanied with a flouriſh of my weapon, that they ſlunk off in great confuſion, and ſoon after left the gardens; while I had the ſatisfaction to receive the congratulations and thanks of a number of gentlemen and ladies, who were pleaſed to applaud my behaviour on this occaſion.

Having

Having got rid of this troubleſome affair ſo much to my honour, I turned to the ladies, and ſoon brought them to good humour, by relating the adventures of Raily, and how luckily I had recovered my money, at the ſame time producing the notes as a convincing proof of my veracity. They were much diverted at this piece of information, and were very anxious to ſee this extraordinary Hibernian, and his hoary wife, but upon inquiry, found they had quitted the place a little before.

By this time the ſky began to be overcaſt, and, from the impending clouds, I conjectured we ſhould have rain in a few minutes. In conſequence of this belief, I went out to look for the coach-man I had employed to carry us home, but after a long ſearch, he was nowhere to be found; and what vexed me the more, was, that every body had almoſt quitted the gardens. It had already began to rain very ſmartly, and

there was no proſpect of getting down by water without being half drowned on the way. In this dilemma I ſpyed a hackney-coach by itſelf, with an old great-coat upon the ſeat. I now reſolved to act as the preſent exigency ſeemed to require; for, not doubting but it was in waiting for ſome perſons who had engaged its ſtay, I thought I had as much right to the convenience as thoſe who had infringed upon my property; and very deliberately handing the ladies into it, I mounted the coach-box, equipped myſelf in the great-coat, and giving the horſes a whip, was at Weſtminſter-bridge foot in a trifle of time. Here I ſhifted my pretty fare into another convenience, and quitting the old one, which I left at a public-houſe door, with the maſter of which I left a crown to defray expences, I had the pleaſure to bring this event to a happy concluſion, by landing them all ſafe at home, where the apothecary was much diverted at the recital of our evening's adventures.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Am horribly perplexed at my precarious ſituation, and find myſelf more and more in love.—Conſult with my friend Dick, who adviſes me to declare my paſſion.—Invite my miſtreſs to Hampton-court, and make a full diſcovery of my heart.—Am bleſſed with a mutual return of affection, and come home in a tranſport of unbounded joy.

IN the mean time I could perceive, that while I was endeavouring to engage the good liking of Miſs Sophy, I had unwillingly made a conqueſt of her two companions, who ſtuck to me like my ſhadow: I could not reſt five minutes in the day, but they were continually peſtering me to play upon the violin; and when I chanced to touch upon any ſoft air, they always drew

conclusions, that gave me no room to doubt of their meaning.

Such a ſituation a few months before would have flattered my vanity exceedingly; but now, when my whole faculties were wrapt in the adoration of my darling miſtreſs, I looked upon this accident as the greateſt misfortune that could happen to me. I could not even look upon my charmer, but they took umbrage at it; and I ſoon found, that if I had a mind to ſtay there much longer, I muſt put in practice a declaration of love to one or other of them; having been already given to underſtand by ſeveral ſignificant hints, that ſuch would be not only welcome, but was alſo expected.

This diſcovery imparted abundance of vexation. I found it extremely difficult to do violence to my heart on the occaſion: for, however light I might have

have made of theſe verbal compliments while I remained diſengaged, now I was fairly in for it, every word, look, or geſture, that was any ways derogatory to my preſent feelings, ſtung me to the quick. I eaſily foreſaw, that if I pretended love, the mercenary cuſtom of the world would oblige me to make ſome preſents, the better to ſignify the ardency of my paſſion, which at this juncture I had no great inclination to. Beſides, I muſt be under a neceſſity to come to an explanation with one of them, with regard to the honourableneſs of my intentions, neither of whom was I in the leaſt deſirous to be engaged with. I languiſhed with impatience to declare my mind to my dear Sophy; but was ſo haunted by one or other of her rivals, that as yet I never could get that opportunity.

What gave me a vaſt deal of uneaſineſs on this account, was the precarioufneſs of my ſituation, and narrowneſs of my fortune. I could not, on reflection,

entertain the thoughts of impoſing myſelf on her, whom my ſoul adored, as a man of circumſtance, when I was ſo far beneath her in that important article. I now could have no idea of a love being real that was founded on the tottering fabrick of a fortune, and was afraid her notions of me would be very mean, ſhould ſhe once come to ſuſpect, that, after all my pretenſions, I had only a deſign to marry her for the ſake of her money. My nature was too proud to own myſelf any thing below my preſent appearance, and yet my love was too elevated to engage her affections upon a falſe narrative. In ſhort, I experienced to my coſt, that I could neither live without her, nor yet declare my paſſion without the riſk of being diſcarded with diſdain, ſhould the truth be once unfolded. Beſides, had I even been upon a footing to demand her conſent openly, I had too much reaſon to fear the brutality of her guardian would put a moſt effectual ſtop to my farther progreſs,

ſo

ſo long as the late marriage act ſhould put it in his power to enforce her obedience, not only to prevent a too haſty removal of her fortune from his hands, but alſo when he ſhould diſcover, that inſtead of making my addreſſes to one of his daughters, I had come there only to effect my deſigns on his ward with the greater facility.

In this perplexing dilemma I had recourſe to Dick, unfolding my difficulties, with the preſent ſituation of my affairs, and deſired his advice how to proceed in ſo great an embaraſſment. He ingenuouſly told me, he was of opinion, that both the ſiſters had conceived a regard for me, more on the account of their thinking me a proper object for a huſband in point of money, than any regard to my perſonal qualifications, as being too much engroſſed with their own importance, to think well of any body elſe. He then adviſed me, the beſt way to come to a private confe-

conference with my miſtreſs, to take the opportunity of her abſence to carry the ſiſters to ſome of the public walks, in which caſe I could do the ſame with her another time without ſuſpicion, where I might then declare my love, endeavour to gain hers in return, and truſt to time for the reſt, as ſhe would very ſoon be of age, and out of the power of her avaricious guardian.

I liked this councel of my friend ſo well, that I reſolved to put it in practice. In a few days I took the advantage of my charmer's paying a viſit abroad, to invite both the ſiſters to Marybone gardens, and obtained their conſent with great readineſs. Here, as before, I aſſumed much gaiety of ſpirits, ogled to one in the other's abſence, and made dumb love to both; and after doing myſelf the honour to ſpend a moidore on this occaſion, conveyed them home under a full perſuaſion, that each had made a conqueſt of my heart; and I

ſoon

ſoon found by their behaviour, that I had acted my part to admiration.

Having finiſhed this affair with ſo much addreſs, I fancied there would be no room for jealouſy to invite Miſs Sophy in like manner, but I was ſome time before I could find occaſion to bring this part of my intentions to bear. At laſt, as good luck would have it, they were both obliged to go down to Deptford to viſit a ſick relation; and I took that opportunity to beg Miſs Sophy's company in a ſingle horſe chaiſe to Hampton-court. I ſoon obtained her conſent to do me this pleaſure, and we both ſet out pretty early. Language is impoſſible to paint the ſituation of my thoughts, at finding myſelf alone with the joy of my heart on this occaſion. I experienced ſuch floods of pleaſure, that I was hardly able to think at all; and we were got to our journey's end before I could bring myſelf to ſpeak one word to the purpoſe.

When

When we arrived at Hampton-court, I immediately drove to the Toy, and handing my partner into a handſome room, beſpoke a very elegant dinner. The commotions of my mind were ſo great at finding my tongue, as it were, debarred of utterance, that I was fain to ſwallow down a few bumpers by way of inſpiring courage, which rather increaſed than diminiſhed my confuſion. My miſtreſs ſoon perceived my diſorder, and begged to know what ailed me, for that I looked very ill. Aroused at this obſervation, I thought now or never was the time to effect my purpoſe; and after ſeveral unſucceſsful attempts, I at laſt made ſhift to tell her, that it was no wonder I was a little indiſpoſed, for I had laboured under the influence of a conſuming diſorder for ſome time, and now, that I had an opportunity to put in trial a ſpecifick for cure, I was under terrible apprehenſions leſt I ſhould be forced to

ſmart

nart ſeverely for any little eaſe I might rocure thereby.

She turned pale at this declaration, ıd telling me ſhe was very ſorry to ear I was ill, propoſed going back irectly for London. No, my charm- ıg Fair, ſaid I, aſſuming courage at ıeſe favourable ſymptoms, my ſoul's elight, and darling of my heart, home ın afford me no relief: my home, my ›ul and my all are centered in thy an- elical boſom, and if I am ſo unhappy ; to incur your diſpleaſure at this diſco- ery, I ſhall be the moſt wretched of ll mortals. From the moment I be- eld your divine form, I found myſelf ke the ſolitary turtle in the wilder- eſs; the ſurrounding pleaſures of this ay city were dead to me; the face of ature put on an unwonted appearance f gloom; and I could not reſt till I ıould be under the ſame roof with my looming Sophy. It was you that drew ıe there; it was for the ſake of be- holding

holding thy lovely countenance, that I put up with the indignities of the brute your guardian, and daily ſuffer the impertinence of the prudes his daughters. Glad of poſſeſſing the joy to be ſo often near the darling of my heart, whoſe lovely eyes, and every artleſs ſmile, entranced my ſoul to paradiſe, I was above every other conſideration, and obliged to do violence to my love, by pretending a paſſion, where I could not but look with diſguſt, leſt, by betraying the ſecrets of my ſoul, I ſhould be deprived of the pleaſures of your endearing company. In pity then to my woes, in compaſſion to my love-ſick heart, kindly proclaim my pardon for this bold proceeding, and in return for my diſintereſted attachment, ſay you will now and then permit me to pour out the anguiſh of my throbbing heart, and whiſper in your ears the unbounded, infinite, and eternal depth of my fixed, my unalterable love!

Here

Here I ſtopt, and had worked up my paſſions ſo much in the ardor of delivery, that the tears trickled from my eyes, and my whole man was enervated into downright woman.

At this unexpected and heart-felt declaration, my dear girl's lovely face was covered with bluſhes, ten thouſand times more charming than the roſy crimſon of the eaſtern ſky. She chided me kindly for conceiving a paſſion for one I had ſo little knowledge of; but thanked me for this inſtance of my good will in her favour, which ſhe was the rather induced to believe real, as ſhe had imbibed a very good opinion of my morals. She obſerved, that love was a ſubject on which ſhe had hitherto beſtowed very little attention, as being a circumſtance that was not to be entertained without mature conſideration. She ſaid, it was time enough to think of theſe things ſome years hence, when we ſhould be better enabled to launch into

into life with experience, and not augment the number of thoſe unhappy people, who, by an over-haſty choice, are a melancholy proof of the folly in entering upon the moſt ſerious buſineſs of life with as little concern as they would upon a party of pleaſure: and concluded with deſiring me to check this riſing paſſion in the bud, till I ſhould be fully convinced, whether love had not blinded me to overlook ſeveral inconveniencies which might naturally attend ſo important a ſtep as marriage.

Tranſported at this favourable anſwer, ſo much beyond my warmeſt hopes, and by which I had the pleaſure to experience, that ſhe was alſo no ways engaged, I re-aſſumed my ſuit with great earneſtneſs, expatiated on the difference of a love founded on a ſympathy of ſouls and a ſimilitude of manners, where the choice was mutual, and the chance for happineſs very great, and thoſe merce-

mercenary matches that were every day made up, where the ardor of individuals was increaſed and diminiſhed in proportion to the magnitude of each other's bags; and took notice, that, provided true lovers had wherewithal to keep them above the dependance of a ſcornful world, there was the greateſt likelihood of a ſolid and a laſting joy. It is not my intention, my deareſt Sophy, continued I, to inſinuate from this, that all cares of worldly matters are to be laid aſide. People of diſcretion will always provide for futurity, in order to prolong their joys unmoleſted, and furniſh a decent proviſion for their growing offspring; and I am far from wiſhing to engage in an affair of this nature, even with my ſoul's joy, before my circumſtances are inquired into, my fortune eſtabliſhed, and my monies called in; and I ſhould ſcorn, loath, and deteſt myſelf, were I capable to entertain a thought that ſhould render the happineſs of my charmer within the leaſt

leaſt verge of doubt. I am a ſtirring and a venturous man, and have hitherto found means to ſupport the character of a gentleman, without overlooking the main chance: I may be worth a round ſum, and perhaps nothing at all; for, though the ſeas are the main ſource and inlet of all treaſure, the man, whoſe fortune is dependant on the winds and waves, and ſubject to the ravages of a powerful enemy, is but on a precarious and tottering foundation: and could I only be ſo happy as to obtain my Sophy's approbation of my flame, and engage her affections in my behalf, I would wait contentedly the iſſue of what Providence ſhall think fit to turn out in my favour, with regard to my adventures I have now at ſea; and if they ſhould turn out agreeable to my expectation, I will ſettle my deareſt's fortune upon her to a ſingle farthing, retire from a life of care and anxiety, and make the whole buſineſs of my future life one continued

effort

effort to convince her of my boundleſs and uncommon love.

'You ſpeak ſo generous, and are ſo 'honourable in every thing you either 'ſay or do,' ſaid the dear girl, with a modeſt bluſh, 'that I ſhould think my-'ſelf unworthy ſuch honourable treat-'ment, were I capable of diſſembling 'on this occaſion; and it is with plea-'ſure, I muſt tell you, that if you can 'obtain my guardian's conſent, there 'ſhall nothing be wanting on my part 'to eſtabliſh your happineſs on a laſt-'ing foundation.

At this welcome and unexpected condeſcenſion, my ſoul was loſt in extaſy: I fell at her feet, and embracing her knees, Ah! thou lovely pattern of beauty, cried I, thou dear, thou melting charmer of my tranſported heart! what ſhall I render for this unmerited goodneſs, as much above my warmeſt hopes, as the dear author of my joy

ſurpaſſes

ſurpaſſes the reſt of her ſex in every ſpecies of admired perfection! if my whole future life can be thought capable to reward ſuch tranſcending goodneſs and virtue, I ſhall think it glorioufly ſpent in ſo pleaſing a work; and with this ring I ſeal my eternal love and conſtancy. Saying this, I got up and preſented one to her trembling hand, and received another in return, while I raviſhed a melting kiſs that ſet my whole blood in a feveriſh flow.

In this happy ſituation it was impoſſible to contain myſelf. I had always been crowned with exceſſive ſpirits upon the leaſt ſmile of fortune; but now, when my ſoul was bleſſed with a full declaration of conſenting love from the only woman in the world from whom it could be agreeable, I was really to be pitied. I gazed and looked ſo wildly, that ſhe began to be in fear for my intellects, and made a motion for going home.

It

It was no wonder I was ſo moved, conſidering my ſituation. I had mentioned things, in the tranſports of my heart, which were far from being real; and, notwithſtanding all her love in my favour, I was ſtill unhappy in thinking what would at laſt be the iſſue of this affair.

On our way home, I told her, I was of opinion it would be prudent to conceal this matter from her guardian, till I ſhould be in a condition to call in my accounts, and demand his conſent with honour; which ſhe readily approved of, and on this conceſſion I was much eaſier.

When we arrived at home, I was glad to find the two ſiſters had not as yet come back; and I regulated my looks ſo well at ſupper, that neither the apothecary or his wife could perceive the leaſt ſymptoms of my attachment. After this repaſt I took occaſion to acquaint

quaint Dick with my happy proſpects, at which he expreſſed much joy, and we determined to conſult farther as to my future proceedings, by his ſtepping up unperceived to my apartment, and ſleeping with me that night.

In the mean time my ſoul was on the rack of impatience, and by ſome one bold ſtroke I reſolved to complete my happineſs, though at the hazard of my utter ruin for ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Conſult with Dick on the ſpeedieſt way to eſtabliſh my fortune. — I propoſe the gaming-table. — He diſſuades me from this raſh ſtep, and goes out ſurgeon in a privateer. — I aſſume the garb of a gentleman-commoner from Oxford, and introduce myſelf at a dutcheſs's houſe. — Have a run of luck, and preſent my miſtreſs with a gold repeater. — Wager two hundred guineas on the recovery of a peereſs from a burning fever, and loſe it. — Toſs up with a young lord for one hundred pieces, and come off a looſer. — Decline in my fortune daily, and am ruined by the villany of Raily. — My affecting farewell with Sophy. — We interchange mutual vows of love.

IN conſequence of this reſolution, I conſulted with my companion in order to bring matters to bear directly:

for I told him ſeriouſly, I muſt either be totally happy, or completely miſerable in a ſhort time; the ſituation of my mind being ſuch, that life in that condition was inſupportable. My money, I found, with the additional ſupply of Raily's, and my ſhare in the privateer, amounted to barely four hundred pounds; for I had no way conſulted œconomy ſince love had poſſeſſed my ſoul. I thought the tedious methods of privateering were inconſiſtent with the then ſtate of my finances; and, after ſeriouſly weighing the matter pro and con, I reſolved to make a bold ſtroke at the gaming-table, and bring the affair to a ſpeedy concluſion.

Dick did all he could to perſuade me from this raſh ſtep, ſetting forth the infinite hazards I ran of being overreached by ſharpers, who, having made this buſineſs their whole ſtudy, were conſequently much ſuperior to me in every article of advantage: he obſerved,

rved, that it would be better to explain the whole ſtate of my affairs as ey really were, and truſt to the ſtrength f the young lady's love for the event; nd that, if I ſhould chance to have a n of ill luck, it would only entail the ore miſery upon me, in regard that I uſt then be at a ſtill greater diſtance om her in point of fortune. But my eart was too proud to liſten to this holeſome admonition, which certainly as the beſt at that juncture, and I regarded the propoſal with abundance of iſdain.

What! ſaid I, ſhall I be guilty of uch a meanneſs, after having carried hings to ſo great a length? after having ngaged her affections, and been bleſſed vith a full declaration of conſenting ove, to own myſelf an impoſtor? a ean, mercenary, intereſted villain? Shall he, whom my ſoul adores, think I ave only put on the garb of a gentleman to betray her to infamy and want,

under the ſpecious appearance of a well-diſſembled paſſion? What opinion can ſhe have either of my œconomy, or judgment, who ſhall live at ſuch a rate as I have done, without any ſettled income, but ſpending an inconſiderable ſum which is my all? Will ſhe not think, that the man who ſhall take ſo little care of his own money, will be as regardleſs of hers, when once he has got both the command of it and her perſon, under the new acquired title of huſband? If this is the beſt advice you can give me, even keep it to yourſelf. No, let me rather languiſh under the miſeries of a hopeleſs love for ever, than by an action, diſhonourable to my ſoul, attempt to impoſe on the loveliеſt of her ſex, in ſo baſe a manner. That man only fancies himſelf in love, who can be capable to act ſo mean a part: he may indeed be ſaid to be in one ſhape in love, but then it is ſelf-love; it is all centered in his own gratification; and, provided he can only pleaſure himſelf

in

in the enjoyment of a happineſs which at the beſt in this caſe muſt be but ſhort lived, he has otherwiſe very little regard to the ſatisfaction of his miſtreſs, who muſt feel ſome very painful ſenſations on ſuch an occaſion. If I was to do as you adviſe me, how do you think we could long ſupport it, without breaking in upon her fortune, which, at all events, muſt be kept inviolably ſacred? My paultry trifle would hardly be ſufficient to furniſh out a houſe, and defray the neceſſary expences of a year; and I have experienced too much the inconſtancy of fortune, and the roguery of mankind already, to riſk any part of her happineſs, on the ſhallow and precarious footing of trade, let the proſpects at firſt be ever ſo deluſive; and, God knows, we ſhould make but a pitiful figure on the annual income of ſixty pounds a year in ſuch a place as London, and with a riſing progeny, if it ſo ſhould pleaſe Providence to bleſs us with that mark of

his favour, unleſs ſome method could be found to extend our revenue to at leaſt four times that ſum; ſo that, I ſay, no more of this ſtuff for the future. The die is caſt, and complete happineſs, or total miſery, muſt quickly be the conſequence.

He was very much amazed at my ſtrange and unaccountable notions, as he called them, which, he allowed, might indeed be honourable to the extent of the phraſe, but were far from what the generality of lovers would aſſume at ſuch a criſis: but I was deaf to all his remonſtrances, and truſting to my own ſagacity, reſolved to put my deſigns in practice directly.

He now told me, that, as I had a ſhare in a privateer, he was deſirous to try his fortune by ſea upon the ſame bottom, if I could get him admitted in the ſtation of ſurgeon, for which birth he reckoned himſelf duely qualified.

fied. This I promiſed very readily, and, the privateer ſailing ſoon after, he was, at my inſtigation with the owners, made ſurgeon of the ſhip, and at parting with him, I made him a preſent of twenty guineas, in order to fit himſelf out the more genteely.

All this time I was not idle: I had by the mere dint of application, and a little money, procured admittance among very genteel company at a certain dutcheſs's houſe, and, by dreſſing extremely gay, found means to paſs for a rich young commoner from the univerſity of Oxford. Here I gamed almoſt every night, and, after a vaſt fluctuation of fortune, at the end of three weeks, found myſelf two hundred pounds in pocket. This ſucceſs elated me. I thought it incumbent on me to make the idol of my ſoul a handſome preſent, which I ſoon after did, by obliging her to accept of a very fine gold repeating watch of ſixty guineas

value; at the ſame time telling her, that I was in hope, the happy time would ſoon arrive, when I ſhould be bleſſed in the enjoyment of her amiable company without alloy. She received this token of my eſteem like herſelf; obſerved, I had no occaſion to manifeſt the reality of my love by any more ſuch actions for the future, as ſhe was fully aſſured of the purity of my flame; and, after a little modeſt difficulty, conſented to bleſs the impatience of my heart with the endearing tranſports of a chaſte embrace.

In eight days time I had augmented my ſtore in ready money, to full as many hundred pounds, and made no queſtion of being completely happy before the expiration of the ſummer ſeaſon. Could I, thought I to myſelf, but make it up two thouſand pounds, I ſhall do my buſineſs, and leave off this trade, which is but hazardous at the beſt, for ever. On the ſtrength of

ſo

ſo ſpeedy a re-inforcement, I grew extremely elevated, and was continually forming parties of pleaſure, in which the ſiſters had a conſiderable ſhare. I took occaſion to throw myſelf in the apothecary's way ſoon after, and gave him a glance of a five hundred pound bank note, which did not fail to dilate his opticks extremely.

I now and then attended the club as uſual, harangued the citizens on trade, commerce, war, and deſtruction; canvaſſed the decline of our public credit to their univerſal ſatisfaction, and pointed out, from a theory of my own invention, a ſure and never-failing method to eſtabliſh the happineſs of Great-Britain upon a laſting foundation. I joined in with them very heartily in damning H———r to the pit of hell; agreed, that the Em——ſs Q——n was no better than a moſt infernal hell-cat; and drank damnation to the public and private enemies of Old England.

with ſurprizing energy. In a word, I was looked upon in ſo patriot a light by the whole club, that never any grand diſpute was brought upon the tapis, but it was ſure to be referred to my determination; when I always pronounced judgment, and decided the cauſe in queſtion, with a ſhew of great impartiality, and very often, when I knew not one jot about the matter.

I likewiſe went on daily, paying my attendance at the levees of the great; very often taking a jaunt as far as Barnet, Enfield, or Uxbridge, with perſons of great quality, with whom I would very genteely engage for ſome ſuch trifle as twenty guineas, who ſhould draw out the longeſt ſtraw from any thatched houſe in our way; and in theſe polite amuſements had various ſucceſs.

One day in particular I was to lay a hundred guineas with a nobleman of the

he firſt rank, on the toſſing up of a
ueen Anne's ſhilling: it turned out in
is favour, and I paid the money with
good grace, though it drained, in a
anner, my heart's blood.

Not long after this, I had the ho-
our to be engaged with a peer of the
ation in a wager for two hundred pieces
o be determined by the life or death
f a dutcheſs then dangerouſly ill under
ne malevolence of a burning fever.
is my compaſſion drew me to wiſh
er among the number of the living, I
id my hopes on her recovery; but
eath owed me a grudge this bout; for
t the end of three days I was obliged
o depoſit the full ſum, not without
eling the greateſt anguiſh of mind,
id very heartily wiſhing her grace had
en at the devil, rather than I had
tereſted myſelf ſo dearly in her wel-
re.

From

From this time, fortune, hitherto propitious to me, like a deceitful jilt, turned tail to my moſt pathetic remonſtrances. I every day declined in temper as in circumſtances, and could not endure the prying looks of my dear Sophy (who ſoon perceived this manifeſt alteration of my whole man) without ſhedding tears of blood. She tryed, by all the ways ſhe could think of, to come to a knowledge with reſpect to the grounds of my diſcontent; but I eluded all her inquiries by pretending an indiſpoſition, and a vexatious letter I had received from my friends in Scotland, about a trifling law-ſuit then before the court of ſeſſion, and was likely to turn out againſt me.

I continued my deſtructive meaſures, however; and ſeldom a night paſſed, but I loſt as much at the turning of a card, or the cog of a die, as would have maintained me in ſplendor for a month.

I now

I now locked myſelf up in my chamber for whole days together, hardly ever coming down to any of my meals regularly; and when I did come, my looks were ſo eſtranged to the whole company, that the very apothecary took notice of it, and demanded the occaſion, while my dear Sophy was frequently obliged to feign a ſudden illneſs, in order to conceal the falling tear. In vain did ſhe conjure me by all the powers of love, by all our hopes of happineſs, and mutual joys to come, to tell her the cauſe of my diſquiet: I ſtill put her off with ſome trifling evaſions; and by my fruitleſsly endeavouring to recall my good humour that was fled, gave her reaſon to be apprehenſive, that my ſituation, in point of fortune, had taken ſome ſudden turn. I frequently ſecluded myſelf from all communication of the world for days together, and ſometimes worked myſelf up to ſuch woeful frenzy, that

that I was very often upon the point of ending my days by suicide.

But while there was life, there was hope; and while one penny remained, I was inclined to venture all, in hopes of mending fortune to a fresh turn in my favour. I considered, that, as I had left all in the compass of a few [illegible] I might make it up again [illegible] and [illegible] I [illegible] upon my [illegible] and [illegible] the [illegible] I [illegible] I [illegible]

I always pretended to attribute to a violent cold in my head.

With this view I frequented a very famous billiard-table, where they always played high. I had not reſorted to this den of ruin very long, before I found my friend Raily to be a conſiderable member there. Encouraged at this diſcovery, by which I had ſome thoughts of making all up again, I courted fortune with great aſſiduity; and, by betting upon his ſide, and now and then a lucky hit of my own, I quickly got back again one hundred and fifty pounds of my money. This return produced a moſt ſurprizing effect; I indulged a faint ray of hope to gleam acroſs my ſoul, and could look upon my angel with much leſs pain.

I was even ſo infatuated as to forget the many baſe actions of this man, whoſe heart was as black as hell, and ſuffer myſelf to be totally ruined by placing

placing a blind dependance on the villain who had so often deceived me. I was an eye-witness of his picking up great sums of money daily, and little thinking, that one who owed his very life to my indulgence, could be so base as to contrive my destruction, I fell into the snare that was laid for me, and in an unguarded moment was hurried to irremediable misery. My whole fortune by this time amounted to one hundred and fifty pounds, which he gave me to understand, that he had a chance to double in private in an effectual manner by getting in a young fellow of great fortune and little brains, to play for a very large sum of money, and if I would but wait till, we would run halves in the purchase. Little thinking there was any design in all this, further than the honest advantage I affected with great pretence to his destruction, and it was for [illegible] when [illegible] I was one hundred and fifty pounds a winner. I liked

this

his proceeding greatly, and reſolved to improve the preſent turn of fortune by loing the buſineſs in a moſt effectual manner. My antagoniſt, who played with Raily, and againſt whom I betted, appeared a downright country ſquire, and doubled ſtakes every time, till by an accurſed chance, I found my whole fortune depending upon the pocketing of a ball.

At this juncture the emotions of my ſoul were furious: this one chance either made a beggar of me, or maſter of one thouſand pounds. The two laſt balls were already upon the table, and my whole faculties in a ſtate of dreadful ſuſpence. Thrice had they ſtruck alternately, and as many times by the moſt nice dexterity, evaded the concluſion. The attention of the company, many of whom were deeply engaged, was fearfully intereſted, and the two parties ſtript to their ſhirts: bets upon bets were continually augmenting, and

two

two fellows preſent always took them up; till an effort of my antagoniſt pocketed the ball, and ſent me motionleſs to the floor in a ſtate of bliſsful inſenſibility.

When I recovered myſelf from this trance, I raved, ſtamped, and tore like a madman; and underſtanding from ſome preſent, that the ſharpers had gone off with the booty, and they were of opinion, it was a deſigned thing, I pulled out a knife with intent to ſtab the villain to the heart, ſwore he had robbed me at two different times; and not finding the proper object of my reſentment, turned my fury againſt myſelf, and it was with difficulty I was prevented from cutting my throat.

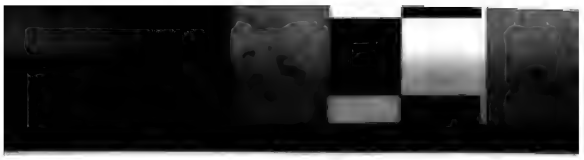
In this terrible condition I was fain to pawn my watch to raiſe money to go home in a chair. I entered the houſe in the moſt conſummate diſtraction, and threw myſelf upon the bed in a tranſport

port of raging madneſs. My landlord was alarmed at my appearance, and ſent his journeyman up ſtairs to bleed me: I met the lad half way upon the threſhold, and with great fury kicked him down again to the very bottom. I tore my hair, beat my face, and in the extremity of anguiſh roared aloud like a criminal on the rack.

I continued thus all the night, and next morning was ſo altered, ſo faint for want of reſt and nouriſhment, that I was hardly able to ſtand. I was in the agonies of eternal horror, when I conſidered, that all my gay proſpects were vaniſhed; that my love, inſtead of diminiſhing, was increaſed tenfold ſince this misfortune; and that all I had in the world to keep me from ſtarving, beggary, infamy, and deſpair, was but barely ten guineas, which I had raiſed on the pawn of my watch. Happily I had in the beginning made it a maxim to pay my board and lodging the firſt day of every

gunner. I had nc
to conſole myſelf
what would turn fi
and this kept up m
deſpair: but I w:
this laſt reſource a
cary came in one
account, that, af
gagement, the pri
and carried into l

This was told
I turned pale wi
quivered on my l
ſuch a ghaſtly lo
almoſt congealed
was now no long
real cauſe of my
moiſtened eye plai



even forced to conceal the reaſon of her tears by attributing them to her ſenſibility, leſt poor Dick Savage, who was on board the veſſel, ſhould have augmented the number of the ſlain. The landlord was greatly affected at his unhappy loſs; his wife and daughters were the ſame; while my ſoul was agonized with anguiſh at beholding the ſorrow of my deareſt love.

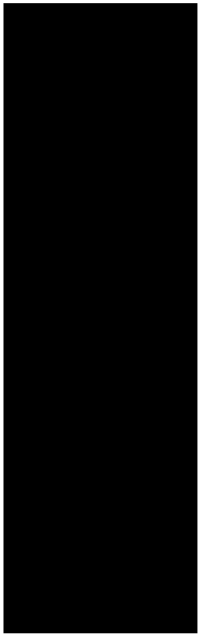
In this diſtreſsful ſituation I was frequently obliged to carry out firſt one thing, then another, privately, in order to keep up appearances a little longer. My cloſet door was now always ſure to be locked, my books vaniſhed piecemeal, and my whole habit gradually put on the appearance of wretchedneſs and miſery. In this melancholy ſituation, my dear Sophy would behold me with the deepeſt concern; her ſoul was upon the rack to come to an explanation of theſe ſtrange appearances, and it was not without reaſon, that ſhe concluded

l been founded. The mother ſaid hing, but devoured me with her s; ſhe ſurveyed my appearance with moſt ſingular attention, and was quently heard to drop the epithets "ſtrange and wonderful! unac-countable, ſhocking, and impoſſible!" ıe maid was every now and then king for my key to clean out the clo-, and I was frequently put to the uſh of conſcious ſhame, to be forced to ny her this article; while the ſiſters ould take notice, with a ſcornful nile, that it was not cuſtomary to lock p any part of furniſhed lodgings. In ıort, all were viſibly eſtranged but ıy dear Sophy: ſhe was ſtill the ſame ind, indulgent ſoul as ever, and, by ıe manifeſt change of her health, plain-told how much ſhe took theſe in-ignities, and my ſilence and appearance, t heart.

I now experienced, that I had ſtaid ıere as long as I could: my money was

that this was likely to be the caſe, ould I once take a final leave, I had eful reaſon to imagine.

Whilſt, I ſay, that I was indulging eſe melancholy reflections, I thought eard ſomebody outſide the door, and eſently Miſs Sophy entered with tears her eyes, and throwing herſelf into a air, accoſted me thus: 'What is the eaſon, my dear Hamilton, for I will ſtill call you by that loved name, notwithſtanding your late unkindneſs in ſo obſtinately concealing the cauſe of your diſtreſs; that you appear thus wretched in your attire, and meagre in your whole appearance? Where is that lively flow of ſpirits, that unbounded vivacity with which you uſed to charm every one into good humour? and why do you thus ſeclude yourſelf from the company of your Sophy, who uſed to be the delight of your eyes? If this amazing change proceeds from any unexpected blow



'and endeavour to regain that quiet 'which I enjoyed before I was en-'ſnared by your proffered love.'

Here ſhe ended, and left me ſo moved at her kind and pathetic addreſs, that for ſome minutes I had neither ſpeech nor power of utterance. I beheld her in a tumult of ſilent woe: my boſom was filled with unutterable ſorrow at ſo mournful a concluſion of my fondeſt hopes; and falling at her feet in an agony of deſpair, Forgive, cried I, the wretch who has preſumed to deceive you! Fond of poſſeſſing your affections at any rate, I fooliſhly thought, that ſo much prudence, wiſdom, goodneſs, and beauty, was to be won by an outſide appearance. I vainly fancied, that the gaudy pomp of dreſs might influence you in my favour, and baſely paſſed for a man of good eſtate, when, alas! even before I was captivated with the luſtre of your divine charms, my fortune was contemptible. Inſpired with

'of mind alſo? anſwer me to that, and 'I ſhall be ſatisfied.'

I was ſo moved at this kind addreſs, that I had only power to break out with, I love thee to diſtraction! had I loved thee leſs, I might perhaps have been happy!

'Why then,' continued ſhe, taking my hand in hers, 'from henceforth and 'for ever I look upon you as my 'huſband; and this trifling loſs, ſo far 'from leſſening you in my eſteem, has 'enhanced my value for you ten thou-'ſand fold. I now plainly ſee your 'kind, your generous, and diſintereſted 'love; and I will patiently wait that 'happy period which ſhall put us both 'above the power of a ſcornful guar-'dian: and as I am painfully con-'vinced of the unhappy reduction of 'your fortune, I beg you will give 'me one convincing proof of your af-'fection, by letting your Sophy, your

'loving wife, minister to your necessities, and supply your wants. If you 'refuse me this request, I shall have 'but a very mean opinion of your profession, and conclude, I have but a 'small portion of your love.' So saying, she pulled out a green silk purse, and poured down one hundred and fifty guineas upon the table, telling me with a most bewitching smile, 'You see, 'my dear Hamlet, I shall make a to-

I had ſome time before, from a knowledge of her princely generoſity, foreſeen ſuch a proffer as this would be made; and I had all along avoided giving her an opportunity to put it in practice. I had, moreover, provided a ſham draught upon a merchant in the city for fifty guineas, in order to deceive her into an opinion, that I had ſtill ſome money left, in caſe ſhe ſhould do as I had conjectured; and now, when I found myſelf cloſe preſſed to accept of the money before-mentioned, I pulled out this note, and told her, that I had reſerved that from the wreck of my fortune, and had no occaſion for any more at that time; that I had a very rich relation in Scotland, who always loved me, and on whom I had great hopes; and as I was now ſo ſituated, I was reſolved to pay him a viſit immediately, and had money enough to carry me down there, where I ſhould always be ſure of a ſupply; and that in caſe I was fruſtrated in my

views from that quarter, I would then throw myself upon her generosity, and become a humble suitor for her love and charity; and concluded with begging her to press me no farther, for I could not receive any at that time.

She was greatly grieved at this my obstinacy, as she termed it, and which she said was very ill timed: she observed, that fifty guineas might not be sufficient to carry me so long a journey, and pressed me so earnestly to take it with fifty pounds more, that I was constrained to accept of that sum, notwithstanding my utmost endeavours to the contrary. I then told her, that I could no longer stomach the insulting airs of the family, and was resolved to set out that very day, and would be back in six weeks, or two months at farthest; that I would leave my few things in her care, and clear off with the apothecary at my return.

She

She conſented to accept of this truſt ʏith great pleaſure; and after conjuring ıe to come back again ſoon at all ʋents, we once more exchanged reci-rocal vows of eternal truth and con-ancy, and ſhe went to her own apart-ıent to avoid ſuſpicion, while I went ut in a mixed tranſport of joy, ſorrow, ɔve, and deſpair.

CHAP. X.

Quit the premiſes in ſtrange diſorder.—Reſolve to amuſe myſelf in a coffee-houſe.—Join in converſation with two ſea-officers, which occaſions my embarking in a perilous adventure.—We enter the harbour of Havre de Grace on the coaſt of France, and cut out a rich St. Domingo-man.—Arrive ſafely with our prize at Portſmouth, which we diſpoſe of to good account.—My fortune is made by this expedition.

I Had not advanced three paces from the ſtreet-door, before my heart panted to go back again, that I might ſee her once more. I turned ſhort round to take another look at the dear chamber-window that contained the darling of my ſoul, and perceived the ſweet girl at the caſement gazing after me.

me, with her handkerchief in her hand, and her eyes red with crying. The ſight of the dear object in tears ſo affected me, that I was ready to faint. I could ſtand it no longer, but, bowing in ſilent adoration, made the beſt of my way from the tranſporting charmer of my boſom, and wandered about for ſome time I knew not whither, till at laſt I determined to ſtep into ſome coffee-houſe, the better to recover my ſpirits by peruſing the papers of the day.

For this purpoſe I entered the Anti-gallican behind the Change, and began to conſider what ſtep I ſhould take next. My journey to Scotland was no more than a feint, the better to deceive her, as to the real cauſe of my abſence; and I thought, that as my circumſtances were then ſituated, it would be the moſt cruel thing in the world to marry her, ſince I had no way to maintain her as I could wiſh. The intereſt of

of her money, as stocks then stood, was no more than forty pounds per annum, which would never do to defray the expences of probably a rising family, in such a place as London, where the rent of a tolerable house would amount to near half the sum, and the articles of cloathing consume three fourths of the remainder. And I could not brook the thoughts to see the idol of my heart [illegible] from a way of life, which was her due by birth, [illegible] fortune, and education, and [illegible] under the [illegible] a [illegible] income, purely for the [illegible] love to me, who was then no better than a beggar. Besides, I was [illegible], that I had no [illegible] to marry her fortune by trade, [illegible] was [illegible] too inexperienced to [illegible] upon so hopeful a foundation.

[illegible] thoughts as these I was [illegible] up, when the [illegible] of a [illegible] servant two gentlemen in the next

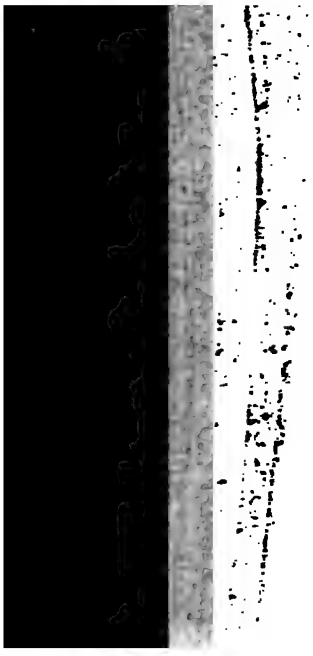
[illegible]

box engaged my whole attention. Says one of them, 'Could we but get one 'ſubſcriber more, the buſineſs is done.' 'Ay,' replied the other, 'but really 'this adventure appears ſo hazardous 'in the eyes of unexperienced landmen, 'that we may triſle away the whole ſea- 'ſon, before we can get any body who 'may be willing to run the riſk: but 'we that know the Engliſh channel ſo 'well, and are ſo thoroughly acquainted 'with all the harbours along the coaſt 'of France and Brittany, would fairly 'riſk our lives upon the execution of 'it, as this is juſt the time to ſnap up 'ſome of their rich homeward Marti- 'nico or Weſt-India men.'

As every thing, wherein there appeared the leaſt proſpect of advantage, let the means to come by it ſeem ever ſo perilous, could not fail to arouſe me at ſuch a juncture, I liſtened to their ſubſequent diſcourſe, and ſoon found, that the affair in queſtion was no other than

'whereby much may be made, and not 'a great deal loſt. The patriot en-'gages in it, not merely from a pro-'ſpect of advantage, but rather with a 'view of diſtreſſing the enemy, in the 'very ſupport of their conſtitution, by 'ſlackening the ſinews of war, in the 'deſtruction of their trade: the bold, 'daring ſons of Britain, who find them-'ſelves, from a thouſand various cauſes, 'upon the brink of deſtruction, fly to 'this method, as the laſt reſource from 'bankruptcy, beggary, and jails; and 'the flower of our ſeamen join in it, 'as a ſure means of avoiding the in-'conveniencies of a man of war. Nay, 'many of our ladies, from a truly 'Amazonian principle, chuſe rather to 'expend their money this way, than in 'the deſtructive meaſures of a gaming 'table; and by the ſpirit they exert on 'this occaſion, plainly denote, that the 'ſouls of women are heroic, brave, and 'generous, when not too much curbed 'and kept under by the injurious re-

'ſtrictions



' muſt be ſup
' large private
' with that ſuc
' pected, not
' liable to the a
' alſo are rende
' from their nu
' day multiplyir
' Great Britain, c
' propoſe to pur
' one of thoſe ſm
' ing boats, wh
' plenty in the ri
' cient ſtore of p
' ammunition, on
' the coaſt of Fran
' the better carry c
' is to cut out one

'language, dreſſed up like French fiſher-
'men, and who are reſolved to fight to
'the laſt drop of their blood before they
'will ſuffer themſelves to be made pri-
'ſoners. The ſubſequent part of this
'adventure is to take the advantage of
'the night, and truſt the reſt to Pro-
'vidence. Four hundred pounds is the
'ſum wanted: a banker in the city
'has ſubſcribed one, this gentleman
'and myſelf each of us one, and there
'is juſt one more neceſſary. We have
'a veſſel in our eye, which will anſwer
'to admiration; and we can have our
'complement of men made up at a
'day's warning, ſo that we can be ready
'to proceed to ſea in three days, after
'the ſubſcription is filled up.'

At the hearing this laſt piece of intelligence, my heart was ready to break. My whole ſtock amounted to no more than the fifty guineas, which my dear Sophy had forced upon me at parting, and which I now pulled out in a tranſ-

port.

port of grief, declaring
and I liked their good
and behaviour ſo well,
ſo happy as to have hac
of the neceſſary ſum, I
have joined in with th
ſure, but alſo accompani
ſon, and fought to th
blood in my veins for t
glorious a point.

This ſhocking diſappo
ſuch an effect on my ſpiri
drops of ſweat ran down m
in taking out my handker
them off, I thought I felt
ſomething in my pocket, wl
not recollect to have been t
morning. Upon examinin
tents of this unexpected b
aſtoniſhment was unbounde
myſelf maſter of one hundr
more, enclofed in a ſilk han
with a note in my angel's d
writing, intimating, that if I

make any remonſtrances againſt its acceptance, ſhe ſhould take it extremely to heart, and would conclude I did not love her. When I began to look back on our tranſactions in the morning, I directly conjectured, that ſhe had watched an opportunity to ſlip it into my pocket unperceived.

This ſecond inſtance of her unbounded love made me ten times more fixt in my reſolves than before. Yes, thou dear extatic charmer, cried I aloud, I will go: thy timely preſent ſhall be improved to ſuch advantage as France ſhall rue, or I will fall in the attempt; and who knows but Providence may enable me to pay thee back this ſtore of goodneſs ten thouſand fold.

Having vented myſelf in this manner, I turned to the adventurers, and obſerved, that I had met with the moſt unexpected windfal, and provided they would go with me to the banker's, that I might

I might be satisfied as to the identity of this affair, I would fill up the subscription directly. They were very glad to hear of this my resolution, and with great pleasure attended me to a very eminent banker in the city, who satisfied me to much about the business, as also of the character, courage, and ability of the two gentlemen, who, he observed, had been employed by him very successfully on a former occasion, that I made no farther scruples, but paid down the money immediately, and in three days after we were all ready for sailing. When the time came that we were to embark, I was in a thousand minds whether I should go without being Sober, or, by indulging myself in a glass more, run a risk of enervating my mind, that was now inspired with surprizing courage, into downright effeminacy. At last I determined for the former, and putting my hopes in a kind Providence, who seldom fails to reward true lovers in the long run, I indulged

dulged myſelf in the happineſs I ſhould have of ſeeing her, perhaps in a few weeks, miſtreſs of ſeveral thouſand pounds.

We ſailed quite down to the nore, with a fair wind, which, continuing in gentle breezes, wafted us to the downs in a ſhort time. Here we brought to a little, to put every thing in readineſs, and conſult on our future plan of procedure. In conſequence of this we determined, with one accord, to make over directly for Havre de Grace, and take a look into the harbour, under the appearance of a French lug-ſail cutter, where, if any thing appeared worth our trouble, we were then to proceed to action.

The nearer we advanced to the ſhore, the more was my boſom filled with anxiety, love, joy, and deſpair. The image of my beloved Sophy preſented itſelf to my teeming imagination in the moſt endearing attitudes, and the delightful

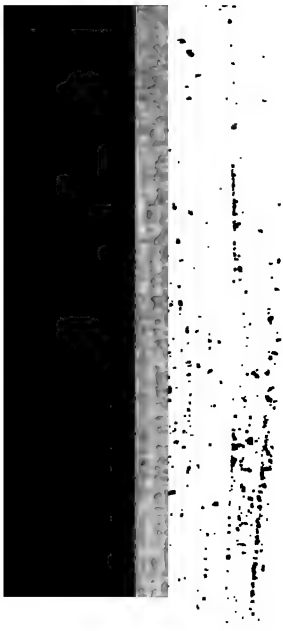
[illegible] pleasure attending an union with that charming girl, engrossed my whole attention. Ah! thou lovely patron of beauty, cried I, thou wonderful quintessence of all earthly perfection! can I indulge the thought of ever enjoying thy fweet converfation, of liftening to the accents of thy inchanting tongue, of hearing thee kindly avowing a mutual return of love, and fafely clafping in embraces of unbounded rapture [illegible]

may the pangs of hopeleſs returns of affection, inflamed by jealouſy and deſpair, for ever be my portion!

By this time it was bordering upon the duſk of the evening. We were juſt in ſhore, a fine off-land breeze, and upon the very verge of high water. In conſequence of theſe favourable circumſtances, a ſmall ſkiff was hoiſted out, in which two bold fellows embarked, to row in towards the harbour of Havre de Grace, and reconnoitre. They had not been long gone, before they returned with the joyful news, that a large merchantman had come in that tide, and was then lying upon her moorings in the mouth of the river. Upon this agreeable tidings we immediately called a councel of war, wherein it was unanimouſly determined, to make in directly for the harbour, and by aſſuming the language of the country, endeavour to perſuade them, we were chaſed in by an Engliſh privateer of great force, and beg

nd eat plentifully of the beſt, and re-unted the perils they had undergone their paſſage home from St. Domin-o, in which they had been chaced by vo thirty gun privateers for the ſpace f eighteen hours; 'but,' continued a eagre old fellow, 'we ſhewed the Engliſh dogs our paint-work, and I fancy ſome of them will have reaſon to remember the operations of our ſtern-chace for one while.' By means f this intelligence we underſtood, that heir cargo conſiſted of indigo, ſugar, nd coffee, and was upon an average, worth forty thouſand pounds, being ne of the largeſt that had ſailed from ny of the French iſlands that ſeaſon.

The Frenchmen, who, during their coming in with the land, and courſe up the channel, had experienced but very little reſt, now they found themſelves ſafe in a harbour, and void of all care, gave a looſe to that indulgence which the preſent opportunity gave them, and



was to be ſeen ab
the favourable o
along ſo earneſtl
into our own veſſ
other; and took
arm ourſelves, li
with ſwords of ſt
fire-arms, that
Frenchman.

As nothing is
any caſe of impor
happening in one
effectually overthr
ſcheme) we reſolv
Our captain, like
upon the Frenchm

with the pleaſing proſpects of making his fortune by this puſh; but love, boundleſs love, inſpired my ſoul with redoubled ardor.

The captain had no ſooner imparted the ſignal to me, than I, in courſe, communicated it to the commander of the forces on board the cutter, who ſprung up with his detachment immediately, and ſecured the few hands upon deck, ſwearing, that the firſt man, who ſhould preſume to ſpeak one word, ſhould be ſent to hell immediately.

When we had effected this material circumſtance, our next care was to point a great gun down each hatchway, loaded with grape ſhot, in caſe of an inſurrection below decks; with a man armed with a cutlaſs, four brace of piſtols, and a lighted match, in order to fire at a moment's warning. The tide of ebb was juſt now begun, ſo that we went to work immediately,

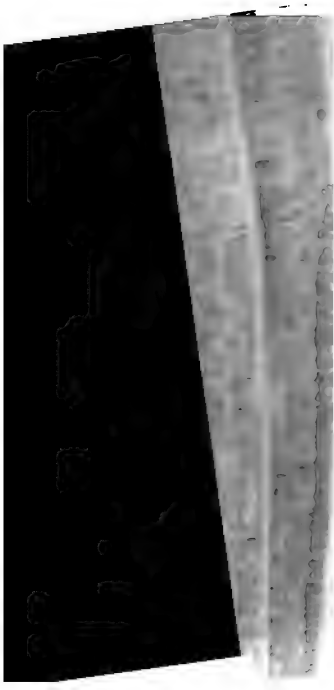
but the leaſt motion to the contrary, would certainly do his buſineſs.

At this woeful tidings he burſt into tears, made the whole ſhip reſound with his doleful lamentations, and told me, that he was ruined for ever, as he was not only a part-owner in the ſhip, but had alſo his whole fortune embarked on board: but my attention was too much engroſſed with my own concerns, to mind thoſe of any body elſe, more eſpecially an enemy; and, in the thought, that better he in his then ſituation, than I in my former one, I indulged myſelf over a bowl of punch on the glorious proſpects before me.

Next morning, the welcome beams of daylight no ſooner appeared than, to our infinite joy, we perceived the coaſt of England in full view, and about three leagues a-head. But our ſatisfaction was increaſed, when we obſerved two Britiſh men of war bound up the chan-

warded my firm confidence in his goodneſs. In a ſhort time, we diſpoſed of our cargo to very good advantage, and found the whole ſum amounted to forty thouſand pounds clear of all deductions.

As by the articles of our agreement, the ſhip's crew were to have one fourth part of whatever prize we ſhould take, ten thouſand pounds fell to their ſhare, and being twenty in number, they thought themſelves extremely happy in ſharing five hundred pounds a man for ſo little trouble. The other thirty thouſand pounds were equally divided between my two ſhip-mates, myſelf, and the banker; in conſequence of which I found myſelf maſter of ſeven thouſand five hundred pounds ſterling.



Notwithſtanding all the aſſurances of my dear Sophy's unalterable love in my favour, I could not help being very uneaſy all the way, leſt ſome one, during my abſence, ſhould have been ſmote with the luſtre of her charms, and endeavoured to ſupplant me in my affections there. In this diſpoſition of mind I entered London, when my firſt care was to convert as many of my bills as amounted to five thouſand pounds, into bank notes of ſingle thouſands each, which I intended as a preſent to my deareſt love. I next equipped myſelf in a very elegant manner, and, with my ſpirits in a ſtate of univerſal exultation, explored my way to the apothecary's, which I ſoon reached, and as my quarter was not expired by ſome days, I knocked boldly at the door, and was let in by Miſs Biddy, the youngeſt daughter, who no ſooner perceived the magnificence of my dreſs, than ſhe retired back in confuſion, and I paſſed nimbly by her into the dear parlour,

which contained the treaſure of my eyes. She was reading, and her companion, the elder Miſs Brown, was ſo ſtruck with conſcious ſhame at my approach, that ſhe quitted the room directly, and left us to the enjoyment of that happy minute.

At this welcome opportunity my ſoul was overwhelmed with floods of pleaſure, and claſping her in my arms, Behold, cried I, thou dear, thou raviſhing charmer of my tranſported heart! behold the man, who has paſſed ſeas for thy ſake, who has faced the tremendous ſhores of a powerful enemy, and, in ſpite of Frenchmen, deſtiny, and death, has returned with ſuch ſtores of boundleſs love and treaſure, as ſhall make us happy for ever. Now will I manifeſt my eternal love: now ſhall my ſoul doat upon thy beauties, and ſicken o'er the ſweetneſs of thy infinite perfections: henceforth ſhall we live in joys unmeaſurable as our love, and be a pattern for all lovers to imitate. No clouds

clouds of domeſtic diſcontent ſhall interfere with our happineſs, or obſtruct the fruition of our mutual bliſs; but we will be one ſoul, ſpirit, and being, to all eternity.

My ſweet girl was ſo moved with this pathetic addreſs, which I uttered with a fervency that ſhook my whole frame, that ſhe had only power to ſigh out, 'And are you come at laſt? and has 'fate now done its worſt? and ſhall we 'yet be happy?'

Yes, thou angel of my eyes! replied I, our happineſs is now beyond a power of doubting: henceforth no envious guardian ſhall part us: no ſcorn or contempt of a diſdainful world ſhall moleſt us; but we will live a joy to ourſelves, a bleſſing to our friends, and an uſeful branch of the community, till fruition ſhall be ſwallowed up in death, and a new ſcene opens, by that glorious

glorious paſſage, to uſher us to joys eternal.

At this juncture the apothecary entered, who, perceiving me in the houſe, and in ſuch gorgeous attire, was almoſt congealed to a ſtone. As in my then happy ſituation, I was above entertaining any groveling notions of reſentment, I ſaluted him with great cordiality, obſerving I was come once more to take a dinner with him, after which I ſhould be glad of a conference in private for a few minutes. He returned my compliments with great civility, inquired very courteouſly after my health during this laſt abſence, and, by degrees, we were re-inſtated in our former tranquility.

During the time of this repaſt the mother gazed at me with ſurprize and wonder; the daughters were confounded at my magnificent appearance, and, by ſome ſide-glances at Miſs Sophy, teſtified

teſtified well enough the workings of their invidious ſouls on this occaſion.

After dinner I begged the favour of a few words with my landlord in his cloſet, where I ſet forth my unbounded love to his beauteous ward, with the ſum and extent of my finances; and, after obſerving I would ſettle all her own fortune upon her, and five thouſand pounds of my own, deſired his conſent to our union.

At this declaration he aſſumed great uneaſineſs, and ſunk into his former doubts and ſuſpicions, but concluded by acquainting me, that if I could make it appear I was actually in poſſeſſion of the fortune I mentioned, he ſhould be very far from being any obſtruction to our deſires; till when he begged to act in ſuch a manner as became the part of a faithful guardian, watchful over the child of his deceaſed friend, and worthy the truſt repoſed in him.

I was

I was ſo far from being diſpleaſed at this behaviour, that I approved of his precaution greatly; and taking him to my banker, ſoon convinced him to a demonſtration, that I was no impoſtor, at which he teſtified much joy, and congratulated me very heartily on my coming happineſs.

At ſupper I entered into the ſpirit of the converſation with much freedom; and the affair being no longer a ſecret, our repaſt was no ſooner ended, than they very genteely left us to ourſelves, to indulge over the glorious proſpects before us.

When I found myſelf at liberty to ſpeak my ſentiments with freedom, I gave way to the emotions of my heart, and communicated the whole of my proceedings ſince our laſt parting, at the concluſion of which I put the bank notes into her lap, and conjured her to bleſs the impatience of my love by conſenting

to

to our marriage in a few days, during which interval I would take the opportunity to invite a few ſelect friends to be preſent on that joyful occaſion.

She received this token of my love, in a manner as both ſhewed ſhe underſtood the value of the preſent, and that ſhe was not under any ſurprize at this additional inſtance of my good-will in her favour. She took notice, that as ſo ſhort a time remained before ſhe was to be mine for ever by the laws of God and men, ſhe was reſolved to give me an early ſpecimen of her duty and obedience, by chearfully ſubſcribing to my will in all things; and, gazing upon the moon, which then ſhone forth in full luſtre, obſerved with a moſt inchanting accent, 'Who knows, my 'deareſt huſband, but if we act our 'part in this portion of time like good 'chriſtians and lovers of virtue, but 'we may hereafter be bleſſed with each 'other's

'other's company in the world of ſpi-
'rits, and be enabled to comprehend
'ſome of thoſe ſtupendous bodies, which
'our preſent organs are unable of un-
'derſtanding? This is a thought I
'have often indulged with great plea-
'ſure ſince your abſence, and com-
'forted myſelf, that if it ſhould have
'pleaſed God to ſeparate us here, yet
'chriſtianity affords a glorious proſpect
'hereafter, when we might perhaps be
'bleſſed in each other's ſociety with-
'out alloy.'

Exalted girl! cried I in a tranſport of incomprehenſible joy, what a thought is here! and how greatly thy underſtanding, beauty and virtue charm my ſoul, is impoſſible to expreſs, and time can only diſplay. Yes, my Sophy, we ſhall live here, only to live hereafter; and when death approaches, we ſhall only look upon it as a cloſing the ſcene of a long courſe of dull, taſteleſs inſipidities,

pidities, and an entrance to a new ſpecies of beings, where our faculties ſhall be enlarged to underſtand the amazing productions of our bounteous Creator. As daily experience ſhews us, that ſome animals have one ſenſe only, others two, ſome three, and gradually aſcending to five, which is the ſummit; is it not natural to think, that man in his new ſtation ſhall receive large additions of underſtanding, as incomprehenſible to him now, as the blind or the deaf are incapable to conceive the bleſſings of thoſe precious ſenſes, which they never enjoyed? We ſhall then, my deareſt Love, by the wonderful power of God, be enabled to tranſport ourſelves with as much eaſe from one place to another, as our imaginations can now play; or the motion of any part of our bodies is performed by our will, and the immediate influence of animal ſpirits. How great then muſt be our joy, when we ſhall find ourſelves capable

capable of entering, perhaps, the very body of that glorious luminary the ſun? of exploring the wonders of its mechanical movement, and underſtanding the fixed laws, by which the Great Creator regulates the univerſe? Then, quick as thought, traverſe from pole to pole, meaſure the diſtance of ten thouſand leagues in a moment, and dart with incredible agility through the wide expanſe; ſtill finding out new ſubjects to exerciſe our wonder, gratitude, reverence, and love, to that infinite Majeſty, who has raiſed us to ſuch immenſe happineſs. Who that can indulge ſuch conceptions but for a moment, would ever be guilty of a willful crime? But mortality is frail, and Jehovah knows it; he will not lay more to our charge, than we can well bear, and hath provided a glorious Saviour for fallen man, to whom be the higheſt praiſe our lowly minds can expreſs, for ever.

Theſe

Theſe thoughts had ſuch an effect on us both, that with great fervour we implored the Almighty to endue us with ſuch a portion of his grace, that we might be enabled to avoid doing any thing diſpleaſing in his ſight, and live as became not only members of ſociety, and rational beings, but alſo creatures ſo wholly dependant on his will, that we could not exiſt for one ſingle moment without his immediate protection and providence.

Having diſcharged this duty, we parted for that night; and by mutual conſent, our marriage was fixed for the firſt of May, which was then within the diſtance of five days.

I now wrote a letter to my two companions in Portſmouth, with an invitation to come up to London immediately, as I was deſirous of their preſence at my marriage; and I was not a little

little glad to find my friend Dick Savage had eſcaped all perils, and, after a long impriſonment, at laſt come over in a cartel-ſhip. This rencounter delighted me vaſtly. I introduced him to my Sophy, who was very glad to ſee him alive, after having taken it for certain he was dead, and conſented to honour him by giving her away at the ceremony. All things conſpired to render my happineſs complete: my only companion I eſteemed, ſo wonderfully ſaved; my two bold ſhip-mates and fellow-adventurers already in town; my heart full of love, and my Sophy as blooming as ever.

But there was ſtill a ſtroke of *Providence* behind, which overpowered me with ſilent adoration.

The day before that which was to render me the happieſt of mortal beings, chancing to take up a news-paper, the fol-

following paragraph ſtruck me with the firſt glance of my eye:

"If Hamilton Murray will call upon
"Mr. Guy Oſborn, attorney at law,
"in Garden-court, in the Temple,
"he will hear of ſomething greatly
"to his advantage."

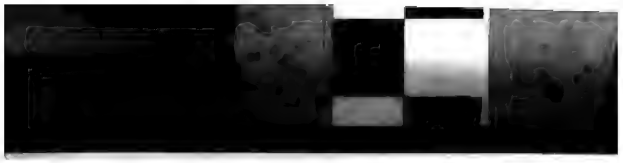
What can this be? thinks I, ſurely my worthy uncle has not given way to the dictates of honour, juſtice, and conſcience, and made me a full reſtitution! If he has, it will be the better for his departed ſoul. It is one thing to live in the commiſſion of ſin, during the pride of health and ſtrength of a robuſt conſtitution; but it is quite another matter to face the Almighty with loads of crimes, unrepented of; and certainly he muſt have been convinced, that repentance without reſtitution, when it is in our power, is uſeleſs. A ſick-bed, and an awful looking forward, are the

'Upon inquiring into the circumſtances of this amazing turn, he informed me, that my brother had been on board the navy many years; that he had been abroad in the Eaſt-Indies, and acted as a conſiderable officer under Admiral Watſon, at the overthrow of the Nabob, and the defeat of Angria the pyrate, by which means he had become maſter of the forementioned ſum; and having received a wound abroad, he had come home for a cure, but the hurt turning to a mortification, had carried him off ſoon after his arrival in London, where he had made great inquiry after me to no purpoſe, and at laſt left me all by his will. So ſaying, he delivered the ſame into my hands, wherein ſuch tender and brotherly mention was made through the whole, that I could not think of his mournful cataſtrophe without ſhedding tears.

I now

I now told him of my expedition to the coaſt of France, my ſucceſs, and the near arrival of my marriage, all which he congratulated me upon, and accepted my invitation to our wedding very chearfully; after which I took my leave for that time, loſt in amazement at the ways of the Almighty, who can ſo amply reward the leaſt turnings of his creatures from the paths of wickedneſs to virtue.

This unexpected good fortune made a new man of me quite. I could not think of the bounty of Providence to ſo undeſerving a creature, without feeling the moſt lively gratitude and thankfulneſs. What am I, ſays I, that I ſhould be thus diſtinguiſhed with ſuch a ſuperfluity of good things, when the cry of dearth reigns through the land, and the poor ſtarve for bread! Is there any one action of my life that is not fraught with folly and ſin? and can I behold



behold the miſeries of my fellow-creatures with a hardened eye, and unrelenting heart? No, henceforth will I endeavour to diſcharge my duty as a chriſtian and a man, that I may fill up that ſpace, which heaven has allotted me, as becomes me, and is my duty ſo to do. And though I cannot accuſe myſelf of having committed any crimes of a heinous nature, yet ſo it is, that, through thoughtleſneſs and inattention, I have done very little to aſpire to the character of even a rational being. I have often wept at another's woes, or even at an imaginary ſcene of diſtreſs, and have laboured under very diſagreeable ſenſations, while under the preſſure of unmerited obligations from a fellow-creature, till I had an opportunity to diſcharge the ſame. Shall I then be uneaſy, if a mortal man but oblige me, till I have repaid him in courſe, and can I be inſenſible to the favours of an infinitely bountiful Majeſty from whom

behaved like herſelf on this occaſion. Modeſty, virtue, humility and love ſhone conſpicuous through her every word and geſture; and I received this precious gift of heaven at the altar, witha heart replete with joy, and not unmindful of the bounteous Giver.

At this completion of all my hopes, tears of joy guſhed from my eyes, my heart was as open as the munificent dew of heaven, and there was not a jail in London, but felt the effects of my firſt ſtep of reformation.

The ceremony was no ſooner performed, than I took all the company to a ſmall but neat country-houſe I had provided againſt this occaſion; and embracing my trembling Sophy with a kiſs of extatic rapture, threw my government ſecurities of my whole fortune into her lap, to the infinite amazement of herſelf and all preſent, except

my good friend the attorney, who now cleared up the whole mystery by telling the death of my brother.

At parting, which was not till after five days, I made every one of my friends some genteel present; and as to my old companion Dick Savage, he had all along proved himself so honest and [illegible] I complimented him with five hundred pounds as a token of my value for him, and talked to his having writ me for the future in the quality of a companion, and something [illegible] to his advantage, when I would not fail to serve him to the utmost of my power.

It was not long after this, that I had a very alarming instance of the unfathomable ways of Providence. The gentleman, who had all along been reputed a man of good circumstance, had a statute of bankruptcy taken out against

againſt him, which ſo broke his ſpirits, that he fell into a lingering diſorder, and ſoon after died. It ſeems his unbounded avarice had prompted him to engage in various branches of buſineſs, excluſive of his trade, which had brought on his ruin.

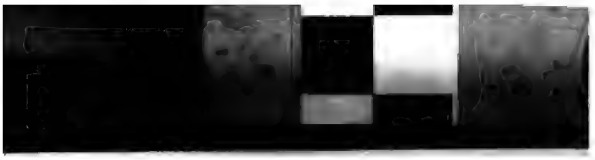
His wife, finding herſelf reduced from a ſtate of affluence to pinching poverty, ſickened at the reverſion, and followed her huſband ſoon after; and their children, by their parents death, became objects of compaſſion, and worſe than common beggars, as they had, by their pride, rendered themſelves odious to all their companions, who, as is general in ſuch caſes, took that opportunity to inſult their diſtreſs, and pay back their former ſcorn with augmented intereſt.

But mark the effects of an ill-timed pride! Finding all reſources cut off, and that

that they had no other proſpect but coming upon the pariſh, they had recourſe to my Sophy, took ſhame to themſelves, and implored her relief and pardon. That angelical creature, far from repaying them in turn, or upbraiding them with former actions, received them both with a good grace, teſtified her ſorrow at hearing of the death of her good guardian and his wife, and promiſed to intercede with me in their favour.

This ſhe did ſo effectually by repreſenting their pityful caſe in ſuch a light, that, notwithſtanding all my reſentment, I could not hear it from the mouth of my deareſt Sophy, without being greatly moved. She obſerved, they were the companions of her early youth; and, though they had ſome little failings, who was without them? affliction was a bitter pill, and would effectually work a thorough cure.

Theſe

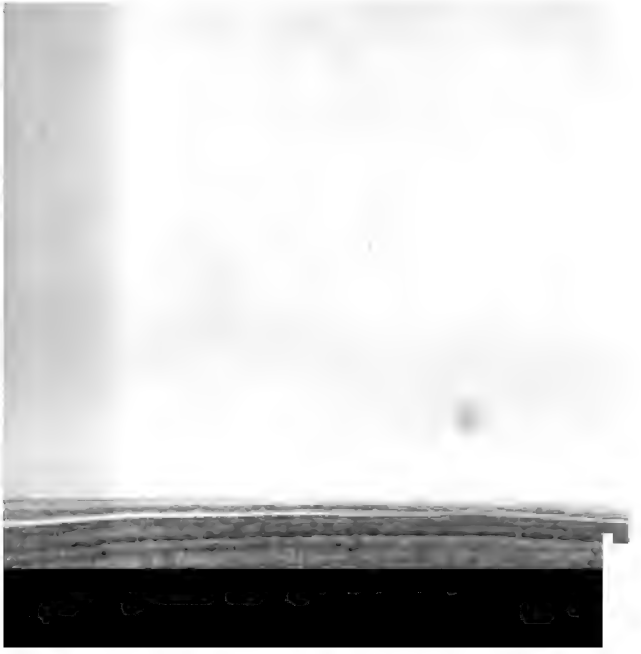
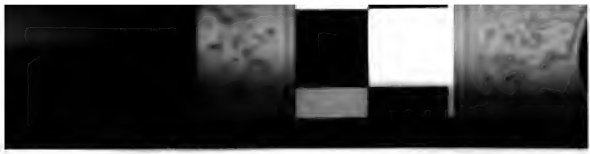
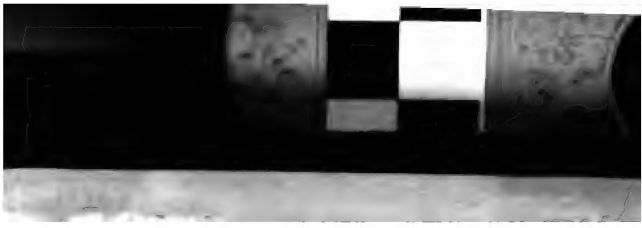


Theſe reaſons prevailed; I received them both into my family, dried up their tears, and promiſed to be a friend to them for the future.

The eldeſt I diſpoſed of ſoon after to a young farmer, on a ſmall eſtate I had purchaſed in Bucks, and gave him three hundred pounds with his purchaſe. The youngeſt, who was actually a girl of fine ſenſe, has ſince made a wife to my friend Dick, who married her, and my dear Sophy did not fail to ſhew her generoſity on the occaſion.

We have ſince taken up our abode in the country, where we daily employ ourſelves in the pleaſing duty of relieving the poor around us, who watch the motions of my blooming Sophy as their guardian-angel.

Serene pleaſures crown our days, and our nights are bleſſed with that happi-

happineſs which tranſported lovers only know, and which the libertine, in all his round of ſenſual delights, never once experiences, nor has even a remote idea of.

F I N I S.